

THE
BUSY-BODY;
OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF
Monsieur BIGAND.



VOL. II.

THE

BUSY-BODY;

OR THE

ADVENTURES

OF

MORRIS BIGAND.

CHICAGO: PUBLISHED BY

W. B. ELLIS

o *George Dant*
THE
BUSY-BODY;
OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF
Monsieur BIGAND;

A Man infinitely Inquisitive and
Enterprizing, even to Rashness;

WHICH
Unhappy Faculties, nevertheless, in-
stead of ruining, raised him from the LOWEST
OBSCURITY, to a most SPLENDID FORTUNE.

INTERSPERSED
With several Humourous STORIES.

THE WHOLE
Containing great Variety of ADVENTURES,
equally Instructive and Diverting.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

V O L. II.

D U B L I N :

Printed for JAMES WILLIAMS, in Skinner-Row.

M D C C L X V I I I .

1849 6. 15

BUSY-BODY;

OR THE

ADVANTAGES

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY

THE GIFT OF

FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY

Apr 10 1865

Monsieur BIGAND;

A Man who is not only industrious and
enterprising, even to Riches;

WHICH

By Charles de Liery, chevalier
de Moully.

With several humorous stories.

THE WHOLE

Containing many Volumes of Adventures
and the most curious events.

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. I.

DUBLIN.

Printed by James Whelan, in King's-Row.

1849.



THE
PREFACE.

WE do not pretend here to make an Apology for this Second Volume; but we cannot help giving our Reader's Notice, that the Incidents, wherewith it abounds, are sufficiently affecting, and the Descriptions sufficiently lively, to be read with some Eagerness. I make but few Reflections; every one has his own peculiar Way; but I could wish others would do it in my Stead, in order to reap from thence that Advantage,

vi P R E F A C E.

which all ought to propose to themselves in reading ; which is, to strengthen and confirm themselves in virtuous Courses, when they are virtuous ; and to extricate themselves from those Dangers and Precipices into which they have suffered themselves to be hurried, by their vicious Inclinations, or Weakness.

When the Adventures, related by any Author, are read with this Disposition, they engage our Attention so much the more, as they come the more up to the Rule, laid down for us by *Horace*,

*Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile
dulci.*

Moral Discourses are naturally dry, and attended with a Gravity which inclines one to Melancholy ; one may resemble it to a very good Judge of
Musick,

Musick, who sings an excellent Tune, with the utmost Truth and Exactness; but with a very disagreeable Voice. The Author (like an able Doctor, who finding it absolutely necessary to purge his Patient, and that he has an insuperable Aversion to taking any Thing of Physick, gets the better of his Dislike to Medicines, by disguising them under an agreeable Appearance and Outside) enlivens, if we may make use of that Expression, the most serious Part of his Moral Discourses, in order to engage his Readers Attention, and make those Impressions upon them, which he had proposed to himself.

What we have said about the Earnestness wherewith it is usual to peruse any Book of Amusement, is, to induce our Readers not to be like a Man, whose voracious Appetite makes him eat his Victuals without chewing it ;

viii P R E F A C E.

it : through which Greediness, he neither enjoys the true Relish, nor Delicacy thereof. Consideration is the Palate, which tastes and digests the Sentiments which fall in its Way ; and the longer they remain impressed upon the Mind, the more Advantage we derive from thence ; it is not enough to read what is agreeable with Pleasure, we ought not to forget what is useful.

An Author frequently amongst his Readers, meets with some of an amazing Indolence and Supineness, who will not give themselves the Trouble of drawing any Inference from an Adventure ; wherefore, he does it for them ; this is being himself the Vehicle, to convey the Reflection into their Minds : There it remains, there it buds, because it would cost some Pains to banish it thence. I have known a Lady as beauteous as the Day, who
carried

carried her Indolence to such a Pitch, that she would stop at the most affecting Part of a Book, through her Laziness, which would not suffer her to turn over the Leaf : She lisped also, for the same Reason ; it would have cost her too much Trouble to speak plain.

We have received several Letters, concerning the First Volume of this Work ; this Second Volume will serve as an Answer to them all. The Purport of them is, our Readers are uneasy about the Fate of *Bigand* and *Rametzi* ; and cannot easily persuade themselves, that the Remainder of the Work, namely, the Third and Fourth Parts, included in this Second Volume, can possibly contain any Incidents so very moving, as those in the Story of *Rametzi* ; besides which, they cannot believe, that it can have any Relation to the Life of *Bigand* ; but that it is a
Sort

x P R E F A C E.

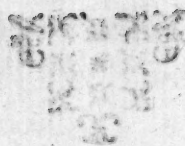
Sort of Episode, lugged in by the Head and Ears, without having any Connection with the main Narrative : But it is our humble Opinion, that, after having read this Volume, they will be convinced, it was not possible to take away one of the Pillars of this Work, without overthrowing the whole Superstructure ; and that the Story of *Rametzi* is not only very moving, as they are pleased to grant ; but also necessary, ay, and absolutely necessary : It is very difficult to pass a just Sentence upon a whole Performance, without examining all the several Parts of which it is composed ; to do otherwise, would be like judging of the Architecture of a Palace by the Stones whereof it is to be built ; or being positive, as to the Character and Temper of a Man, only from his Physiognomy ; such a Way of judging must frequently be doubtful and uncertain. This is what we thought necessary to premise,
in

in relation to our first Volume, and we hope, together with the Perusal of this, will be a full Answer to all that has been alledged about it; we shall not, therefore, detain our Readers any longer in the Porch, but refer them to the Parts following, which will enable them to judge for themselves.



T H E

in relation to our first Volume, and we
 hope, together with the Perusal of this
 will be a full Answer to all that has
 been alledged about it; we shall not,
 therefore, detain our Readers any lon-
 ger in the Town, but refer them to the
 Paris following, which will enable
 them to judge for themselves.





THE
BUSY-BODY:
OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF
Monf. *BIGAND*.

PART III.

CHAP. I.

Bigand leaves Rametzi, who makes him a noble Present, and goes to the Ambassador's. A lively Description of Jacks-in-Office. He falls in Love with a young Maiden, whom he meets in the Anti-Chamber. He gets acquainted with her. The Story of the Chevalier de Rocfer, as told by the Ambassador. The dangerous Task, enjoined Bigand by his Excellency.



MATTERS being thus adjusted, our Conversation ended, by the Present of a Purse of a Hundred *Louis d'Ors*, which *Rametzi*, in a Manner forced upon me; though indeed, I did not make many Ceremonies about it; after which, we went out of Doors; and as soon as we were

got to the Head of the little Street, before-mentioned, where *Rametzi's* House stood, we parted from each other, and took different Ways; my new Acquaintance, according to Custom, muttering all the while to himself, just in the same Manner as when I first met him.

I hastened directly to the Apartment assigned me at the Ambassador's, and having shifted my Dress, went to that of *Saint Onge*; but he was already gone to his Excellency, and was then locked up with him in his Closet. I resolved, therefore, to wait in the Anti-Chamber for his Excellency's Appearance, with Intent to give him an Account of the Affair he had given me in Charge, and of the Adventure of the old Bandy-legged Spy, but not to say a Word about *Rametzi*.

In Effect, it was upon him I founded my chief Hopes of advancing my Fortune; the Hundred *Louis d'Ors*, which seemed a Kind of Earnest thereof, appeared to me a much more solid Basis whereon to build my Expectations, than all that had been promised me besides; and whatever Love I had for the new Business I had undertaken (whether the Dependance annexed thereto lessened the Charms thereof, or whether I then thought myself fit for something better) I began to look upon it with a different Eye; the Purse of Gold, no doubt, occasioned this Fickleness in my Sentiments; and my Desires rose higher, in Proportion as my Pockets were better lined. This was no more than the natural Consequence of the continual Variation of our Thoughts: We are never satisfied in this Life; no sooner are we possessed of the Thing we coveted, than we immediately aspire after something else more considerable.

I walked

I walked up and down the Anti-Chamber, full of these Reflections, and waiting for the Embassador's Appearance, as was before observed, 'till they were interrupted by the Arrival of divers other Persons who, by Turns, attracted my Attention. Twenty different Figures moved about the Apartment, with a distracted and thoughtful Air: One was preparing a set Speech, which, undoubtedly, he forgot the Moment he saw the Person appear for whom it was designed; accordingly, one might observe him, with his Eye fixed, and a Gesture suitable to his Thoughts, either setting forth his Right, or disguising and varnishing over his Baseness.

A Second hurried up and down the Apartment, with as much Eagerness as if he was going a Journey that required the utmost Dispatch: Several others surrounded a Footman, whom they were endeavouring to prepossess in their Favour, by the Recital of their respective Stories; imagining it an infallible Means to make their Affairs take a happy Turn; mean while, one might see the insolent Varlet, with contracted Brows, and a haughty Air, answering them by Monosyllables; and deciding every Thing magisterially; though, to say the Truth, his whole Credit depended upon his Livery, or, at most, upon his being able to introduce them a little sooner than ordinary to his Master.

A Secretary, loaded with Papers, appears; the Crowd open and make Way; does he stop a Moment to speak with some privileged Person, or some who had been recommended to him, a respectful Ring is formed around him; divers suppliant Eyes solicit a Look from him; does a gracious Smile appear in his Face, and clear the Gloominess of his Countenance; every one suits

his Look to this rare Alteration, and re-assumes a suppliant Aspect, as soon as the Smile disappears.

I took, however, but little Notice of all these Circumstances; a more affecting Object engaged all my Attention, and fixed my Eyes thereon: This was a young Person, of about eighteen Years of Age, whose dazzling Beauty, lovely Complexion, and graceful Mein, entirely charmed me, and made me interest myself in her Behalf. This fair Unknown seemed to be perfectly devoured with the most profound Melancholy; and I sympathized with her Sorrow, without being acquainted with the Reason thereof: This Concern surprized me the more, as I was not naturally of a compassionate Temper.

In short, this beauteous Maiden attracted all the Faculties of my Soul as powerfully as the Loadstone draws the Steel; I went, therefore, up to her, and seated myself by her: A low Bow, which I made her, *en passant*, was returned me with a Modesty which quite won my Heart; I was as yet an absolute Stranger to Love; but the Hour approached wherein I was to become tributary to the blind Boy.

Being desirous of getting acquainted with the charming Unknown, I entered into Conversation with her about several indifferent Subjects; and the enchanting Sweetness of her Voice, the fine Turn of her Expressions, with her ready Wit, and some lively Flights that escaped her, made me imbibe large Draughts of that bewitching Poison.

I was just about to ask her Leave to pay my Respects to her when the Folding-Doors of the Embassador's Apartment opened on a sudden; and his Excellency appearing, every one strove
who

who should be first to approach him; I had, therefore, only Time enough to desire her to favour me so far, as to wait for me, in a public Garden adjoining to the *Hotel*, in case we should lose Sight of each other; pretending, as a Reason for my Request, that I had something of Moment to say to her; and flattered myself with the Hopes of being able to serve her with the Embassador, if she had any Business with him.

On my thus saying, the Unknown looked at me with an Air of Astonishment; but had soon greater Reason to be surprized, when his Excellency, having singled me out from amongst the Crowd, called to me loud enough to be heard by all the Company; come hither, Monsieur *L'Abbe*, walk into my Cabinet, I have a Word or two to speak with you. I obeyed immediately, which prevented my knowing what was the Business of my *Incognita*, a Point which I had then more at Heart, than all that had befallen me 'till that Hour.

I found *Saint Onge* in the Cabinet, who, no sooner saw me, than he cried out; Ha! Monsieur *L'Abbe*, whence come you? What has happened to you? How chanced it you did not lie at Home? Monsieur *D*—— has already enquired after you twice, and was surprized, as well as I, at your Absence. It has not been very long, however, answered I coldly; and, as you will be here, undoubtedly, when his Excellency returns, you will then hear what Account I shall give him of the Reason thereof; it would be too long to relate to you at present.

Scarce had I uttered these Words, when divers Persons entered the Closet, and were soon followed by the Embassador; who, after having

dispatched them, sat down in his Easy-Chair, and leaning with one Elbow upon his Bureau, whilst his Head reclined upon his Hand, looked me full in the Face, and asked me, whether I had performed the Task he had enjoined me.

I was not in the least confounded ; having before premeditated what Answer I should make ; and, accordingly, gave him an Account what Method I had used, to come at the Knowledge of the Means to which his Excellency had so generously had Recourse, to secure me from the Persecution of *D'Ossilly* ; confessing to him ingenuously, that, upon my having given his Excellency so just a Character of that Wretch, I was satisfied he would have him be taken into Custody : You judged right, said the Embassador ; and I am very glad you have discovered what Measures are concerted to procure that Profligate his Liberty ; I will take suitable Precautions to render all their Schemes abortive.

I acquainted his Excellency, next, with the odd and unequal Rencontre, between the Bandy-legged old Fellow, and the vigorous young Cavalier ; to which he listened with great Attention ; asking me several Questions upon that Head. As soon as I had related the whole, he kept Silence for some Minutes, and seemed in a deep Study ; after which, he called to *Saint Onge*, and whispered somewhat in his Ear (during which I withdrew a little out of Respect) the Secretary going out again soon after, he made a Sign to me to approach him.

I am very well satisfied with your Behaviour hitherto, said he ; continue to be punctual and diligent, and you will do your Business : I am going to enjoin you a very dangerous and difficult Task ;

Task; do you find you have Courage enough to undertake it? I could have wished, with all my Heart, that Monsieur *De*—— would have allowed me some Respite, before he had given me any Orders; the Business required of me by *Rametzi*, together with the Meeting of my Unknown, made me sensible my Moments for the future would become very precious to me; however, I took Comfort, on the Embassador's telling me, he would grant me any reasonable Time for performing the Affair he was about to give me in Charge; as also the Liberty to behave therein in what Manner I pleased, and to lie abroad, if I judged it necessary.

This Condescension pleased me, and was infinitely agreeable to my Humour; for the Restraint I was under at the Embassador's made me a little uneasy; especially since I found, Notice had been taken of my not having lain at Home. That Independance, of which I was entirely fond, and for which I should have sacrificed every Thing, caused me to look upon this Obligation, of being continually under the Eye of *Saint Onge*, as a Kind of Confinement: Not but that he was a very honest Man, and treated me with the best of Manners; but no one loves to live with those who have a Sort of Authority over him, and know him to the Bottom; besides, I was, in a Manner, bound to make him my Confidant, in Return for his having unbosomed himself to me; and this did not suit me, by any Means, in the different Situations, wherein I plainly foresaw I should soon be; but let us return from whence I have digressed.

What I require of you, said the Embassador, is, to use your utmost Efforts, to hunt out, and seize upon, that terrible Kill-Cow whom you met

met by Chance ; and who has escaped one of my Emissaries, as far as I can find, merely by his own Rashness in not suffering any one to assist him : Hearken to me attentively, whilst I acquaint you with his Story in few Words ; and also give you some necessary Cautions, in order to your not miscarrying in this Undertaking.

This young Spark, then, goes by the Title of the *Chevalier de Rocfer* ; not that this is his true Name, for he has several ; but that is nothing to the Purpose at present. Formerly he frequented all publick Places ; as Gaming-Tables, Assemblies, Play-Houses, and the like ; but, since he has had Intelligence that there is a Design to seize him, he is upon his Guard, lodging sometimes with one Friend, and sometimes with another, but never having any settled Habitation : In short, he has hitherto eluded the Pursuit of all my most diligent active Emissaries ; and has treated them so ill, that there is not one of them, at present, who dares venture to follow him.

Whenever he finds himself dogged, he pretends not to take Notice thereof ; and, soon after, turns down some blind Alley, or into some dark Passage, where he conceals himself, and no sooner does the Spy follow him thither, but the *Chevalier* rushes upon him, seizes him, and breaks both his Legs with an Iron, coloured over like a Cane, which he always carries in his Hand, in order to disable him, as he says, from following and watching him for the future : Accordingly, he has already lamed several of them ; and that very Bandy-Legs, whom you mentioned, was made a Cripple by the *Chevalier de Rocfer*. What I have now told you, continued the Embassador,

bassador, is not to terrify you, but that you may be upon your Guard, and never follow him, into any blind Alley, or Passage: whilst you are in the open Streets, you are safe.

I found by this Discourse, I had no great Cause to be surprized at my meeting so many broken legged Cripples; in Effect, the Reason was very plain; and I am satisfied every one will be of my Mind; but to return from whence we have digressed.

It is necessary, however, resumed the Embassador, that I should enter yet somewhat farther into Particulars, in order to put you upon a right Scent for the Discovery of Mons. *de Rocfer*. He has lately taken it in his Head to pretend Love to the Daughter of a President, named *Mademoiselle de M——*, who lives in the Street *de C——*; her Family were about to marry her very advantageously, when this new Lover entered the Lists, and gave them to understand, he would never suffer any other, than himself, to be Possessor of that young Lady. But her Father sent him away with the Contempt he deserved; and resolved not to be bullied out of the intended Match.

Rocfer being informed thereof, as also that the Marriage was to be celebrated within three Days, went to the intended Son-in-Law, who was a Master of Requests, and forbid his going on any farther with his designed Nuptials. The privileged Lover, too brave to obey such an arrogant Injunction, made a Jest thereof, and laughed at it; whereupon *Rocfer* sent him a Challenge, which the Master of Requests accepted; but the Duel ended with the Loss of his Life.

Enraged

Enraged hereat, the young Lady's Father, who is one of my Relations, came to me, and begged me to exert my Authority and Credit to deliver him from so dangerous a Man as *Mons. de Rocfer*; I promised him it should be done; and obtained all the necessary Powers, for laying Hold on the Spark, and satisfying the President, in what he desired of me; from that Time, my Emiffaries have been after him; but he has been so much upon his Guard, that he has hitherto escaped the Punishment he deserves.

Mean while, another Lover appears, and makes Proposals of Marriage, to *Mademoiselle de M—*: No sooner does the *Chevalier de Rocfer* hear thereof, but he goes to his Rival, who is a Colonel of a Regiment, privately; and lays the same Command on him, as on the Master of Requests. The Colonel despises it; *Rocfer* gives him a Challenge; the other accepts it, and is killed: A fresh Search is therefore made after the *Chevalier*; but to as little Purpose, as before.

A third Competitor enters the Lists, who, being acquainted with the two former Adventures, which were in the Mouths of the whole Town, declared publickly, he would wait for the *Chevalier de Rocfer*, without stirring; that *Draw-cansir* did not suffer him to languish long in Expectation of him; he met him, and killed him upon the Spot.

Hereupon, *Mademoiselle de M—*, who never before could bear to hear the Name of *Rocfer*, beginning to reflect upon the Greatness of his Passion, which made him hazard his Life so frequently, and with so little Concern, that he might not be deprived of the Hopes of enjoying her, grew desirous of discouraging him upon this Head.

Head. There is no Kind of Desire indifferent in the Heart of a young Person; *Rocfer* is handsome and well made; this Interview charmed *Maiselle de M*—; and *Rocfer* gained such an absolute Ascendant over her, that she had the Face to declare to the President, her Father, she would never have any other Husband than this terrible *Chevalier*.

In short, since that Time, two or three advantageous Matches have been again proposed; which the young Lady has refused, on Pretence of the foregoing Misfortunes; alledging also that she should look upon herself as accessory, in some Measure, to their Deaths, and consequently guilty of Murder, should she consent to accept of any of them. Neither the President her Father, nor her Admirers have been able to make any Objection to these reasonable Remonstrances; however, the former having discovered that his Daughter carries on a Correspondence, underground, with the *Chevalier de Rocfer*; and, having been informed that this enterprizing Lover designs to carry her off by Force, has applied to me afresh, and desired my Counsel and Assistance in this Emergency.

The first Expedient proposed was to confine the young Lady in a Nunnery; but afterwards the President, being afraid she would give Notice thereof to *Rocfer*, and consequently would not be safe, even there, thought it would be better to take Charge of her himself; and to keep her under Lock and Key, 'till some End can be put to this troublesome Affair, which I have very much at Heart.

Accordingly I had concerted Measures as well as possible, to have had him seized; and they could not have failed, but through the Imprudence

dence of the presuming Fool who undertook it; and who has paid dearly for his Rashness, in not suffering any one to assist him, as you beheld yourself. I believe you, *Bigand*, to have more Discretion; and, as you already know your Man, and have seen of what he is capable, I intrust the securing him to you; if you succeed therein, I will take Care of your Fortune.

Hereupon I told the Embassador, I would leave no Stone unturned, to accomplish his Desire, and hoped he would have no Reason to complain of my Want of Vigilance, or Remissness, in the Execution of this Affair. His Excellency seemed highly pleased thereat; and gave me in Writing, the President's Name, with Directions where he lived, and an Order to *Saint Onge* to supply me with whatever might be necessary for the Prosecution of this Adventure; which done, he dismissed me.

As soon as I was got out of our *Hotel*, I hurried away with the utmost Impatience to the publick Garden where I had appointed the Unknown to wait for me; and the Moment I entered therein, saw my Charmer sitting upon one of the Benches, with another Woman who had accompanied her to the Embassador; whereupon, I hastened up to her with an Emotion which sufficiently foretold me, that, instead of that Indifference and Insensibility which 'till that Hour had reigned in my Heart, I was then going to experience all the Violence of the most ardent Passion.



C H A P. II.

Bigand accosts the fair Unknown. The Occasion of her Sorrow. What Course he takes to remove it. A Quarrel that had like to have ensued thereon. Prevented by Bigand. His terrible Disappointment and Fright.

HOW fearful is a Man, when he first begins to be in Love! I accosted the Unknown, with the greatest Perplexity imaginable; and it was not without some Difficulty, I renewed the Conversation broken off by the Coming of the Embassador: At last, I began by asking her, if she had Reason to be satisfied with the Audience granted her by his Excellency. It is impossible, said she, to be more graciously received than I was by *Monf. de ———*, but, alas! continued she (and was not able to refrain her Tears). to my sad Misfortune, my Visit has been to no Purpose.

O Heavens! cried I, greatly affected at the Condition wherein I saw this beauteous Maiden, is there no Way to be found to assist you in your Affair? Is the Case so desperate, that it is absolutely past all Remedy: How happy should I think myself, if I could by any Means contribute thereto! In short, Madam, pursued I, your Tears touch me to the Quick; and I would give any Thing in the World to deliver you from that Sorrow with which I see you devoured. Nothing can be more generous, replied this young Beauty, but I begin to be sensible there is no Help for miserable me.

Sure, continued she, the pearly Drops streaming all the while down her lovely Cheeks, I am the most unfortunate Person in the Universe! Yes, I am undone for ever; what will my Lady Dutchess say! What will become of me! Ah! Madam, pursued she, turning towards the other Woman who sat by her, I have no longer any Refuge to fly to but Death.

These moving Expressions, with the Tone wherein they were uttered, pierced me to the Bottom of my Heart. Alas! cried I, with an Air of Concern, why am not I endued with the Gift of Divination? Or, why cannot you repose some Confidence in me? I fancy, were I informed of the Cause of your Affliction, I might bethink me of some Means to contribute towards your Relief. You are of a compassionate Temper, Sir, said the other Woman, a certain Proof you have been well bred; the Sorrow of this young Maiden is but too reasonably grounded; and you have treated her with too much Civility, and seem to be too much concerned for her, to have the Cause thereof made any Secret to you; I will acquaint you with it, therefore, myself, since her Sighs and Tears will not suffer her to do it; all her Comfort is, she did not bring it upon herself.

Her Story, Sir, may be told in few Words; she is of a very good Family, but she is not rich; one need not blush to acknowledge that, at this Time of Day, since it begins to grow fashionable: She lives with the Dutchess *de* —, who does not use her so much like a Servant, as one of her Friends. It is true *Lusnette*, that is the young Maiden's Name, has deserved this Distinction, by Abundance of Discretion, and an unblameable Conduct.

Unfortunately

Unfortunately for her, however, the other Day, a particular Acquaintance of her's, for whom she has a great Value, came to visit her; and begged her to use her Interest to procure her the Loan of some Jewels, which might enable her to make a handsome Appearance at a Play, wherein she was to act the chief Part. Hereupon, *Lusnette*, who is always ready to do any one a Kindness, overjoyed she had an Opportunity to oblige her Friend, promised to let her have a Pair of her Lady's Diamond Ear-Rings; and told her she need only come or send for them, when they were wanted; provided she would be sure to return them again, as soon as the Play was over.

As it was to last but three Hours, *Lusnette* imagined she might venture to do this, without mentioning it to her Mistress; the Time being too short for her Grace to take Notice they were missing; but she was not aware of the Consequence of so important a Loan. The Evening before this fatal Play was to be acted, a Gentleman, richly dressed, or, at least, one who appeared to be so by his Garb, desired to speak with *Lusnette*, and gained Admittance to her, by pretending himself a Cousin of her Friend's, and that he brought a Letter from her. The Contents thereof were, that being prodigiously taken up, on Account of the Play which was to be acted that very Night, she hoped *Lusnette* would excuse her not coming herself, and would deliver the Ear-Rings, she had promised to lend her, to her Relation who was also, to perform a Part in the same Piece.

Lusnette, who is incapable of any Thing dishonest herself, and was, therefore, not suspicious or mistrustful of another, very readily fell into the

Snare, and intrusted him with the Diamonds; this, Sir, is the Source of her Misfortune and the Cause of all her Grief. It appears since, that this pretended Cousin was a Sharper, who having got Intelligence, by some Means unknown, that *Lusnette* was to lend such Jewels, as also the Name of the Person who was to have them, took Advantage thereof, and by the artful Stratagem of forging a Letter, as from this Friend, got Possession of them.

Next Day, this fatal Mystery was found out, by the Coming of *Lusnette's* Acquaintance to desire the Ear-Rings: The poor harmless Maiden imagined, at first, her Friend had only a Mind to banter her, and make herself merry at her Uneasiness; wherefore, she was as willing as could be to humour the Jest; but, judge her Sorrow and Despair, when this Acquaintance seriously affirmed, she knew not what she meant by this Story of a Cousin; and proved undeniably she had never sent any Letter, or Messenger, upon such an Errand; a Flood of Tears was the Consequence of this mournful Discovery, and put an End to all farther Conversation.

As it was necessary, however, to have Recourse to some other Remedy, *Lusnette*, having some Knowledge of the Ambassador, where we met you, by his visiting her first Mistress, and being informed he employed several Emissaries to dive into the most secret Transactions, imagined the same Persons might be able to get Intelligence of the lost Ear-Rings: Accordingly, she applied to his Excellency, to beg his Assistance in this Extremity. *Mons. de ———* readily promised to do all that lay in his Power; but told her, it would require some Days to make this Enquiry; wherefore, he could not give her a
satisfactory

satisfactory Answer, one Way or other, 'till then ; and appointed this Morning as the Time for her coming again. This brought her thither when you met us ; his Excellency informed her, though all possible Means have been used, no News can be heard of the Jewels, which, in all Probability, will never be found again ; and this it is that has given the finishing Stroke to *Lusnette's* Misfortunes.

I leave you now to judge, Sir, continued this Woman, whether the poor Maiden has not sufficient Cause to give Way to Sorrow. In Effect, what Course can she take to discover this Disaster to her Mistress ? Has she not all the Reason in the World to fear she will not take the Loss of her Jewels as a Jest ; but will accuse her of having invented this Story, with Design to convert them to her own Use. What think you now, Monf. *L'Abbe*, can any Remedy be found for so cruel a Mischance ?

It is a perplexing Case, indeed, Madam, answered I, after studying some Moments, and considering within myself what could be done for her Relief ; but, in short, fair Mourner, continued I, turning towards *Lusnette*, a Means may be found to retrieve all. Good Heavens ! which Way, cried she, briskly, and looked at me with the finest Eyes in the World ? Follow me, said I, getting up ; but first tell me, whether the Value of these Ear-Rings is considerable. Alas ! answered *Lusnette*, it is but too considerable ; I know it full well, since I saw the Money paid for them : In short, each Ear-Ring cost Fifty *Louis d'Ors* ; you may now judge, whether the Loss is not irreparable.

These Words made me take Heart ; I had resolved to sacrifice my all, as I could have done

my Life, if it would have been of any Service, for this fair afflicted one ; when a Man is really in Love, he thinks nothing too much to oblige the Object of his Affections ; but I was apprehensive it would not be in my Power to retrieve her Loss, though I should yield to the generous Sentiments with which my Passion had inspired me. Her last Words, however, as was observed before, dispelling my Fears, Come, Madam, pursued I, gently squeezing her by the Hand, a Thought has just started into my Head, which makes me hope to extricate you from the Trouble into which this false Step has plunged you.

There is but one Thing gives me any Uneasiness, continued I ; which is to know whether you can perfectly remember the Shape of the lost Ear-Rings, and the Size of the Diamonds. Remember them ! cried she, I who have shewn them a hundred Times to my Acquaintance, and have had them almost as often in my Ears ? Ah ! I should know them again amongst a Thousand Pair So much the better, resumed I, calling a Hack as soon as we were out of the Garden, you may then take Comfort before-hand ; I hope ere two Hours are past you will not have any Cause to be sorrowful.

Having thus said, not a little to the Surprise of my two new Acquaintance, I desired them to get into the Coach ; and, after having seated them therein, whispered the Coachman, and ordered him to drive me to the most noted Jeweller's in the Town. He named three or four, and I, that I might not appear a Stranger in such Affairs to the Fellow (for we are all subject to Vanity) pitched upon him whose Name sounded most agreeably in my Ears.

As

As I was about to get into the Hack myself, I found the Women disputing with some Emotion; but, as soon as they saw me, they were as mute as possible; however, fair *Lusnette* appeared visibly in such Confusion, that I could not forbear asking her, with some Uneasiness, the Reason of the Alteration which was evident in her Countenance. Alas! Sir, answered my beauteous Charmer, I beg you would excuse my Timorousness; but I never was before in a Coach with any Man, and they say they are so dangerous in this Town; besides, what has already happened to me gives me good Cause to be distrustful: And—Dispel your Fears, lovely Innocence, said I, putting on the most ingenuous and undesigning Look, I possibly could; you shall find in a little while that, notwithstanding there are a great Number of Knaves and Sharpers, one may sometimes meet with Men of Probity and Honour.

I am unfortunate enough, continued I, not to have the most engaging Appearance.— Here I was interrupted by the old Woman, who, whether, I would or not, was resolved to stand up in the Defence of my Appearance; I put on a modest Air, and seemed desirous of evading her Commendations; however, she persisted therein, and, with some other Discourse to the same Purpose, we arrived at the Jeweller's Door, where we alighted.

A Man of a very good Aspect immediately appeared, who conducted us into a handsome Apartment, where his Wife received us with Abundance of Civility and Respect. The first Compliments being over, I desired him to let us see some of his finest Diamond Ear-rings; he assured me, we should soon be satisfied; for he would shew us such a Number, that we should have

have sufficient Choice, and he would defy all *Paris* to produce the like.

In Effect, he was not long before he kept his Word; and covered a whole Table with an amazing Variety of the finest and most valuable Jewels; upon which, the amiable *Lusnette*, who had not the least Notion of what I meant hereby, asked me very innocently, whether we were at the Repository of all the Diamonds that were stolen. I answered her, with a Smile (perceiving the Jeweller gave her an ugly Look) it was not usual to keep a Ware-house of stolen Goods; but, that I had brought her thither, that she might see whether amongst the vast Number of Ear-Rings that lay before her, there might not be a Pair exactly resembling those out of which she had been tricked.

On my saying this, the Man, who knew not what to make of *Lusnette's* Question, understood, at half a Word, what I intended, or, at least, had some Suspicion thereof; for I observed him tip the Wink to his Wife, and fancied his Arch-Malice meant to say, A pretty Contrivance! This sly Spark of an Abbot has a Mind to play the Gallant to this handsome Girl, and he is no Fool to lay hold on her by the Ears. I durst venture a Wager, I was not mistaken, unless it be in the Identity of the Words.

In the mean while, the precious Merchandize being all displayed with the usual Precaution, and several Pair of Ear-Rings presented to *Lusnette* for her Approbation, she turned away her Head at each of them, and cried mournfully, no, these are none of them: At last, she stopt at one Pair which she viewed with the utmost Attention, she turned them about, held them at a Distance, then drew them nearer, till, at length, having
observed

observed some Mark whereby she fancied she knew them again, her Countenance cleared up, and she cried out, with a joyful Air, here they are; good Heavens! how fortunate am I! how much am I obliged to you, Mons. *L'Abbe*! I have at last found her Grace's Ear-Rings, which cost me so many Tears! Yes, my dear Friend, pursued she, shewing them to the old Woman, do but see them, they are the very same.

The Jeweller, not understanding one Word of this Riddle, could not hear his Property in those Jewels called in Question, and ascribed to another, without some Impatience; in vain did I make Signs to him, he had no Manner of Compliance: What do you mean by that, Madam, said he angrily, and laying his Hand upon the Jewels? These Ear-Rings belong only to me; nor shall they, unless I have my own Price for them. I shall not enter into any Disputes upon that Head, answered *Lusnette*, briskly, all I shall say is, that these Ear-Rings were stolen, not from me, but from the Dutchess *de* —, to whom I have the Honour to belong. Very fine! cried the Jeweller's Wife roughly, and snatching away the Ear-Rings from her Husband, an admirable pretty Story, indeed! Come, Madam, if all your Business here was to tell us these idle Tales, you may begone from whence you came.

As I plainly perceived, by the Impatience which appeared visibly in *Lusnette*'s Face, that the Dialogue was about to grow warm, I took the Jeweller and his Wife aside, and told them the whole Story; adding, that I intended to make amends for the Loss, by purchasing those Ear-Rings, and substituting them in the Room of those

those stolen, provided they would let me have them at a reasonable Price: I said farther, to colour over my concerning myself so much for that beauteous Maiden, that I was her Relation, and my Circumstances were sufficiently affluent to enable me to retrieve her Misfortune, without any great Damage to myself.

In Proportion as I unfolded the Mystery, their Looks became more and more serene; and that gloomy and cloudy Air which *Lusnette's* Words had imprinted on their Faces vanished, and disappeared. Ah! said the Jeweller's Wife, as soon as I had done speaking, what you now tell us, Sir, alters the Case entirely; Good Heavens! I forgive the beauteous Maiden her Mistake with all my Heart; we must make some Allowances for such Disasters, and put ourselves in the Loser's Place; I hope, however, it will not be difficult to retrieve her Misfortune: Come, my Dear, continued she, turning towards her Husband, we must do what lies in our Power, and make Things as easy as we can, in Consideration of what Monsieur *L'Abbe* has told us; his Manner of sympathizing with his Kinswoman in her Loss demands some Regard; all Relations are not like him.

The Husband readily agreed to whatever his Spouse said; and told me, that, to shew how compassionate both he and his Wife were, they would let me have the Ear-Rings for Two Thousand Livres, and that the Diamonds themselves cost that Money; with many other such insinuating Speeches to the same Purpose, all Artifice, and the usual Stile of Tradesmen. I cut short all farther Disputes, by the Offer of Fifteen Hundred Livres down upon the Nail; adding, if they would not take that, I would try elsewhere,
and,

and, accordingly, I went towards the Door, as if I designed to be as good as my Word.

The Husband and Wife again tipped the Wink to each other; which seemed as much as to say, Money is scarce, there is Nothing to be done; how do we know, after all, whether this Abbot, upon mature Consideration, does not want a Pretence to slip his Neck out of the Collar, and be excused from advancing the Money; let us take him therefore at his Word. It is certain, that this Wink meant some such Thing; for the Wife came up to me (and, observe it when you will, in Trade, as well as in the World, the Women always rule the Roast) and told me they would for once let me have them at that Price; but it was on Account of my Greatness of Soul, and the Merit of the Action, wherein both her Husband and herself were willing to share; swearing at the same Time, with a mental Reservation to herself, they lost Thirty Pistoles by the Bargain.

These fair Speeches did not impose upon me; however, without discovering my real Thoughts, I received all their Compliments with Civility, and went up to *Lusnette*, who, having been informed by the Woman who was with her, what was in Agitation, was coming to me to make her Acknowledgements for my Good Will, and acquaint me with her Sentiments on that Head. I begin, at last, Sir, to know how Matters stand, said this charming Creature, with a timorous Air; and I beg you to excuse my Rudeness, on Account of the little Knowledge I have of the World; as I am now apprized of your generous Intention, I thank you for it with all my Heart, but I will never suffer you to be at such a vast Expence for me, and I would rather choose to run all the Hazards

Hazards of such a cruel Adventure, than to lay myself under so considerable an Obligation.

Lusnette having thus said, made me a Curtesy, with a melancholy Air, and was about to take her Leave, when the old Woman, who, undoubtedly, had some Suspicion of what had passed, came up to her, and whispered her in the Ear. *Lusnette* blushed, and appeared greatly disordered; but, at last, it was resolved that my Good-Will should be accepted. This was intimated to me by the old Woman, who added, by way of Extenuation, that I seemed to be a Man of so much Probity, and my Sentiments were so nice, it would be a Pity to chagrin me so much, as to refuse my Kindness.

My Answer was but short; I made them sit down again; the Ear-rings appeared a second Time, and were carefully surveyed a-fresh; after which *Lusnette* told us, they were so exactly like, that her Grace the Dutchesse de——, to whom the Fellows to them belonged, would not —— Scarce had she pronounced that Lady's Name, when the Jeweller, who was now cool, but, being in a Passion, had not minded it when it was mentioned before, interrupted her, and cried he did not at all doubt what she was going to say, for he was her Grace's Jeweller, and the lost Ear-rings were perfectly like those he was now about to sell her, having been made by the same Workman, and from the same Pattern.

The Bargain being struck, the Jeweller and I consulted together what Measures to take, in order to get Intelligence of the Diamonds that had been stolen; and he readily promised to give Notice among the Trade, and have them advertised, to the Intent they might be stopt, if offered to
be

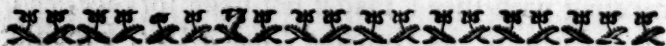
be sold ; assuring me, likewise, that, in Case we were so fortunate to recover them, he would take those again, he was now upon selling us, at Thirteen Hundred Livres ; so that I should lose but two Hundred by the Purchase. Every Thing being thus agreed on, nothing now remained to terminate this Adventure successfully, but to draw my Purse and pay the Money.

O *Rametzi*, cried I within myself, putting my Hand into my Pocket, how fortunate was I in meeting with thee ! Had it not been for thee, had it not been for thy Hundred *Louis d'Ors*, I should not have enjoyed the pleasing Satisfaction of obliging in so sensible a Manner the beauteous Creature who is become dearer to me than all the World besides.

I had proceeded farther, perhaps, in these sweet Reflections, but they were interrupted by a cross Accident, which made me turn pale with Fear ; not a Farthing of Money could I find. My trembling Hands were eagerly employed, and ran over all my Pockets in a Moment, I searched every Corner, turned them inside out, went hastily from the Place where I stood towards the Window, that I might feel every where with the more Freedom, but all in vain ; no Purse, no Money was to be found ; I stamped again with Impatience and Vexation ; and was disordered to that Degree, that a cold Sweat trickled down my Face : In short, I was in the utmost Confusion, when the lovely *Lusnette* and her Companion, being uneasy at the Trouble wherein they perceived me, came up towards me, but being frightened to see me in that Condition, they again retired.

At last, the Jeweller himself asked the Cause of my Disorder ; I told it him ; he shrugged up his Shoulders, and, undoubtedly, believed it all a

Flam. Fortunately for me a Thought came that Moment into my Head, which made me snatch up my Hat in the utmost Hurry, and, telling my dear *Lusnette* I had forgot to take Money out with me, but was going to fetch it, and begged she would not be impatient, for I would return in a Quarter of an Hour, I ran out of Doors, got into the Coach, and ordered it to drive to the Embassador's as fast as possible.



C H A P. III.

Bigand's Despair; which gives place soon after to Joy. He disguises himself; the ugly Consequences of his Disguise. His Uneasiness on Account of his Mistress. He is put in a terrible Fright, and not without Reason.

IT may well be imagined that the Hack into which I got went at a good Pace; in Effect, there was Reason enough for it; the mortifying Disappointment I had met with, as has been already observed, before the Object of my Affections, had set all my Blood in a Ferment, and I was upon a Nettle 'till I had retrieved my Reputation, which I was afraid might suffer in her good Opinion, as well as in the Jeweller's. By great Fortune, I remembered my having changed my Cloaths at the Embassador's; and I did not at all doubt my having left my Money in those I had pulled off.

As soon as I got to his Excellency's, therefore, I flew to my Chamber; but, O unparalleled Disgrace! O Sorrow beyond Expression! None of my Gold is to be found! Not a Pocket, however,

ever, is forgotten, nor a Corner left unsearched. I become as cold as a Stone, and am ready to drop down without Senses. Good Heavens! cried I out in a Sort of Fury, who has been in my Room? The Key was in my Pocket! I run to the Door and examine the Lock, but can find no Sign of its having been picked. I return again to my Cloaths, and endeavour to persuade myself that I have searched them too hastily; I view every Pocket very carefully, there may be Holes in them; I turn them inside out; a Hundred *Louis d'Ors* are heavy, and may be slipt down between the Lining. Vain Chimera, no Gold is there.

Grown perfectly desperate at this fatal Conviction, I throw myself in a Fury upon the Bed, when feeling something hard, that hurt my Head, I clapt my Hand thereon. O sweet Surprize! O Joy beyond Expression! It is my Purse of *Louis d'Ors*. I take it up and kiss it; I talk to it; I laugh, I jump, I sing, I dance ——— Just in this Interim *Saint Onge* happened to pass by my Chamber; and, being surprized at the Noise I made therein, and curious of knowing the Cause thereof, he came in, and caught me singing, dancing, and laughing.

Amazed to the last Degree at such Extravagance, he asked me if I was distracted: As my Money was already pocketed, I had the Presence of Mind to tell him I was to act a Part in a Play, and had been rehearsing it to myself. Oh! if that is the Case, said he, I wish you Joy of your intended Diversion; I should never have thought of any such Thing. Being afraid the charming *Lusnette* would grow impatient at my Stay, and I should not find her at my Return, I would not prolong the Conversation; wherefore he went

away without any farther Discourse, and I hastened to the Coach which was waiting for me at the End of the Street.

I arrived but just in the Nick of Time at the Jeweller's; had I stayed but a Minute longer, all would have been over; *Lusnette* and the Woman who was with her were coming out very melancholy, but my Appearance changed the Face of Affairs. I asked Abundance of Pardons for having made them wait so long; but the Joy they were all in, on seeing me come again, saved me the Trouble of making many Excuses; the Jeweller especially, who found his Account, no Doubt, in this Bargain, could hardly contain himself for Gladness: In short, the Ear-Rings were soon brought out, the Money was paid, and we parted the best Friends in the World; he even made *Lusnette* a Hundred Compliments, and told both her and me that all he had was at our Service.

What a prodigious Effect has Interest upon Mankind! But a Moment before he had given her and her Companion evident Proofs of his Dissatisfaction, and had scarcely seen them to the Door; now he offers them his Hand; waits on them to the Coach; sees them placed at their Ease; and is so very complaisant, to have a Chair brought out, for fear they should hurt themselves, by stepping too high, as they get in. Such little Civilities cost nothing, and often induce People to return again, or direct their Friends to a Place where they have been treated with so much Complaisance.

As soon as we had gone a little Way, I gave *Lusnette* the Ear-Rings which had caused us so much Uneasiness; she received them with a lovely

ly Modesty, a most becoming Blush overspreading her whole Face. I am as sensible as possible Sir, said she, of the Value of the Service you have now done me, nor will I forget it as long as I live. But I don't expect to be excused for Thanks alone; I hope it will be one Day in my Power to—Pray, let us say no more of it, Madam, cried I, interrupting her; I should be very sorry you should think yourself obliged to me in the least; having thus premised, I turned off the Discourse to another Subject.

In the mean while, the old Woman, whom the Sight of my Gold had, undoubtedly, prepos-
sessed in my Favour, was perpetually address-
ing herself to me, and seemed to be desirous of plea-
sing me; but, without being able to account for
it, I found in myself a surprizing Antipathy to
her; and, accordingly, all the Answers I made
her were cold and dry.

This was not very prudent in a Man who was in Love; *Lufinette* might have some Dependance upon her, or might be wholly governed by her Advice; but I did not yet know the World well enough to disguise, or conceal, my real Sentiments. I am not certain, whether the old Woman took Notice, or not, of my bearing her no great Good-Will; but she was pretty even with me, and seemed sufficiently ill-humoured all the Rest of the Way.

I set *Lusinette* down, at the Gate of the *Hotel de—*, as she had desired me ; and as I handed her out of the Coach, and we were upon parting, she asked me, if she should not have the Pleasure of seeing me again ; I answered her, that I was going to ask Leave so to do, which she granted me, with all the Grace imaginable ; she even
D 3 whispered

whispered me in the Ear, and desired me to call upon her next Day, towards the Evening; telling me, she had somewhat of Importance to say to me. I replied only by gently squeezing her Hand, for the old Beldame then came up to us; and I imagined *Lusnette* had some Reasons, to be upon her Guard with this Woman; but I little suspected they were so substantial as I found them afterwards; and it was not long first.

I dismissed the Coach forthwith, and went from thence to a Tavern, where I took Care to get me a good Dinner; whilst I was thus refreshing myself, I revolved within my Mind what Means I should use to perform the Service the Embassador expected from me; it required Courage and Resolution, and that is what I never wanted. I was not long, before I bethought me of a Scheme, which seemed very likely to be attended with Success; wherefore, after having allowed Nature what was sufficient for her Support, I went directly to *Saint Onge*, and desired him to send for his Taylor, that he might take Measure of me for a Suit of Cloaths; which being done, I gave Orders, before him, to have them made very rich.

Surprized thereat, the Secretary asked me, what was my Reason for desiring to be so fine; and what Design I was going upon. To seize that terrible Kill-Cow, said I, of whom you have heard so much Talk, who has slain so many Men, and still continues to render himself so formidable, in this very Suit.

What, cried *Saint Onge*, greatly amazed, have you undertaken that Task! Do you know, there is never an Officer who dares now attempt it? No Matter, I dare, answered I; and, what is more, I flatter myself with the Hopes of succeeding

ing therein. I wish you may with all my Heart, replied the Secretary; but I am very much afraid, dear *Bigand*, that you may be too rash, and may miscarry in your Enterprize; in effect, happy will you be, if you come off with only the Mortification of being disappointed therein.

I took but little Notice of this prudent Warning of the friendly Secretary's, and *Saint Onge* going about his Affairs, I continued giving the necessary Orders for the rich Disguise I had bespoken: This done, and the Taylor being withdrawn, I quitted my Abbot's Dress, and re-assumed that of a Shoe-Cleaner, after which I went out in Search of Adventures. I must confess ingenuously my being fond of this Disguise; a Man naturally has a Liking to that Sort of Life, to which he has been most accustomed; the Transition from a Scullion to a Japanner of Shoes was no Ways surprizing: Besides, it gave me an Opportunity of going any where, and overhearing every thing that was said without Danger.

Never was any one so insatiably desirous of prying into other Folks Concerns, as I was at that Time; and yet one would have thought I had then had sufficient Business of my own upon Hands. *Lusnette* had made herself absolute Mistress of my Affections; and, when one never has been in Love before, the first Impressions are always very lively: I don't know whether it was Curiosity, a little Jealousy, or the Pleasure of seeing the Object of my Inclinations, that led me to the *Hotel* where I had set her down; but thither I went, and I had not been there long, before I had Reason to repent it.

Two famous Tatterdemallions of the Fraternity of the Shoe-Blackers, who were puffed up with

with Arrogance, by Reason of their being in Favour with a *Swift*, with large Mustachio's, who suffered them to exercise their Function at his Gate, seeing me approach their Post, viewed me from Head to Foot with a stern Look, and observing that I took my Stand there likewise, demanded of me insolently, what was my Design in presuming to appear there.

I sat quietly down at the End of a Stone Bench, without giving them any Answer ; but they obliged me quickly to rise again, by coming up to me, and attempting to drive me away. I was, at least, as fond of Mischief as they could be ; accordingly Blows ensued, and I defended myself with so much Resolution and Address, that all who were passing by stopt to see the End of so unequal a Combat.

So far were they, however, from being so compassionate to endeavour to part us, that all of them encouraged me with their Voices, for Fear the Battle should be over too soon for their Satisfaction. By this Time, the Servants of the House being drawn out by the Noise in the Street, flocked about us in Crowds ; and even the Maids and Waiting-women of the Dutchess came to the Windows, to partake of this cruel Diversion.

Amongst the Rest, as much employed as I was by my two Antagonists, I had a Glimpse of my dear *Lusnette* ; and, though I should have been very sorry, had she then known me, it inspired me with as much Courage, as if that had actually happened. In short, the most troublesome of my Adversaries was laid sprawling at my Feet : after which, the second was soon dispatched, and betook himself to Flight ; not daring any longer to cope with so rugged a Boxer.

The

The whole Company then gave a great Shout ; and highly extolled my Skill and Resolution ; the *Swiss*, amongst the Rest, whom I had been so fortunate to divert, and who was mightily pleased with my Vigour, declared, that, since I was so stout, he would give me Leave to take my Post at his Gate. Every one approved of this Sentence in my Favour ; and, as a Token, that I was admitted, as Operator in Ordinary, to the Family, the *Swiss* presented me his Shoes to clean ; and his Example was followed by all the Footmen.

I could very willingly have been without this Favour ; which, however, I was forced to take as such ; that I might not cause Suspicion, by refusing to perform the Duties of this honourable Post. I resolved, nevertheless, firmly, no more to expose myself to such disagreeable Adventures ; for, besides the Baseness of the Employment, I had received two Blows on my Head, which I felt for above a Week afterwards.

At last, after having sweated above an Hour, by Reason of the Honour done me, by these Knights of the Rainbow, who passed many a scurvy Jest upon me, whilst I was exercising my supposed Occupation, I laid myself down upon a Bench, in order to take a little Rest. I was beginning to fall asleep, when the Rattling of a Coach, which arrived at the *Hotel*, made me start out of my Slumber ; it happened to be the Embassador's.

I got up to see him pass by, flattering myself with the Hopes he would have known me ; which would have given me some Pleasure, as I fancied it would have persuaded him, that I deserved his Favour by my Vigilance : To this End, I placed myself as near as I could, as he was getting

ting out of his Coach; and he cast his Eyes upon me; but his Thoughts being employed, undoubtedly on somewhat of more Importance, he took no Manner of Notice of me.

In effect, he would, no Doubt, have passed by me, without my having the Satisfaction I had proposed to myself; but fortunately for me, he let a Paper fall out of his Hands, and, as I happened to catch it up so nimbly, that none of his Servants could prevent me, he received it from me, and looked me stedfastly in the Face. I judged then by his Air, that my Patron knew me again, notwithstanding my Disguise; however, he went on, without shewing by any Sign, that this Discovery had made any Impression upon him. His Visit was but short; within a Quarter of an Hour he came out again; I was then blacking the Shoes of one that was passing by, and, finding me in his Way, set me to work.

His Excellency, seeing me thus employed, could not forbear smiling; which fully convinced me, I was not mistaken in my Opinion, that he found me out, notwithstanding my odd Dress: Accordingly, it pleased me not a little; for though, very often, we are not over and above punctual in the Performance of our Duty, we like mightily to have People think otherwise.

An Heir, at the Bed's-Head of a dying Relation, whilst he is laughing under the hypocritical Cover of a Handkerchief, to see himself on the Point of succeeding him in his Estate, does all that lies in his Power, to persuade the expiring Wretch, of his Sorrow and Concern; in effect, by the well-dissembled Grief, that is painted in his Countenance, one would almost swear, he was ready to give up the Ghost himself, at the Thoughts of a Death he ardently desires: We spend our whole
Lives

Lives in counterfeiting, and in endeavouring to appear quite different from what we really are, and to impose mutually upon each other; thus goes the World.

Next Evening, I went again to *Lusnette's*, at the Time appointed; but was answered, she saw no Body; which surprized me greatly, after what had passed between us: I went however, again, for a Week together, handsomely dressed, without being able to get a Sight of her, or know what was become of her. Sometimes they answered me, she was not at Home, at other Times, that she was busy and in Trouble. This Behaviour created Suspicion in me; I resolved therefore, cost what it would, to dive to the Bottom of it; and, in order thereto, lay in Ambush Night and Day, about the *Hotel*; so that not a Soul, either entered the Gate, or came out, but I could have given an exact Account thereof.

I began, however, at last to grow impatient at the Fruitlessnes of my Labour, and the Time I had lost in vain; in effect, I was one Night, about to take my final Resolution, and give over the Undertaking entirely, when I saw two Women come out of the Gate of the *Hotel*, just as I was going away from thence. My Heart began to beat; and I was seized with a certain Emotion, which told me it was *Lusnette*; nor did it deceive me; she was accompanied by the same old Woman, with whom she was, the first Time I set Eyes on her.

Immediately I asked myself, what urgent Affairs could oblige them to go out at an Hour when every one generally was returning Home? I was too much concerned therein, not to be desirous of coming at the Knowledge thereof; accordingly
I resolved

I resolved to dog them with this Intent, and followed them with all the Precaution imaginable.

On casting my Eyes upon *Lusnette*, I observed she seemed disputing, with some Earnestness, with the Woman who accompanied her; I mended my Pace, therefore, hastened up to them, and walked, so seemingly without Design, the same Way, that I heard every Word which passed between them. Good Heavens! cried *Lusnette*, how do I tremble at the Step you have made me now take! I am very sensible it is quite out of the Way, and, notwithstanding the Assurances you have given me, must needs own, I am heartily frightened thereat.

Very fine, indeed, answered the old Woman, what Hazard do you run! if you was alone, truly something might be said; but am not I with you? That is very right, replied *Lusnette*; and I am pretty well satisfied you are too prudent to engage me in any suspicious or false Step; but I cannot help thinking a Maiden exposes herself to very great Risques, whenever she ventures to visit any Man; and, therefore, if my Advice might be taken, we———

Just as she had thus said, a Coach came upon them, and broke off the Thread of the Conversation; and as the Women, in order to avoid it, turned into a narrow Passage, being incited thereto by the Concern I had in their Discourse, I followed them thither also, as if I had been induced to it by the same Reason, with Intent to overhear if possible, the Sequel thereof. Chance favoured me therein; the Play was just done, and there was no great Likelihood of the Way's being soon clear: I stood up therefore against the Wall, the Passage

Passage being dark, and posted myself so conveniently, that not a Syllable escaped me.

Very well, Madam, cried the old Woman, (who, undoubtedly, was going on with the Discourse, before interrupted by the Arrival of the Coach) do just what you please; you are entirely your own Mistress, and in all I have now done, as I told you before, I have had an Eye only to your Interest: Remember what I have already observed to you, and also the Condition to which you are on the Point of being reduced; indeed you raise Scruples that are by no Means pardonable; only answer me sincerely, what must have become of you, if I had not bethought me of this Place of Refuge, to which I am about to carry you: What——

I allow all this, resumed *Lusnette*, and confess myself a thousand Times obliged to you; but how do I know whether the good Usage you have assured me I shall meet with from this Marquis will be consistent with the Laws of Decency and Virtue? In effect, does it any ways become a Maiden to live with a single Man?

A fine Story indeed, cried the cursed old Woman, does not his Age secure you from all that can be said to your Prejudice? Besides, Child, in this World, one must get out of Troubles as well as one can: You are upon the Point of being turned into the Street, without Relations and without Friends; a good House is offered to you, all that is required, to keep you therein, is a little Complaisance; what will that cost you? The old Man may die, perhaps, in a Week; how do you know but you may find yourself named in his Will?

Come along, then, I say, continued the old Bedlame, observing that *Lusnette* was in Sus-

penſe; let us get along if we can; it is better to come to a Reſolution at once, and not wait 'till the Want to which you would infallibly ſoon be reduced, obliges you to do worſe. You are of a good Family, it is true, but of what Advantage will that be to you, in a ſtrange Country, without a Penny, and perſecuted in your own by your deſigning and ſelf-intereſted Guardian? You have depended upon your Abbot, but have not heard a Word from him; perhaps he may be dead, or his Money may have cauſed him to be murdered: What! does that make you cry? Have a good Heart; in a Week's Time you will be of another Humour, and will hug me for the prudent Counſel I have now offered you.

Had you been my own Daughter, purſued ſhe, I could not have uſed you with more Tenderneſs; alas! while that poor Girl was alive, ſhe did not give me ſo much Trouble to govern her; ſhe was ſo well brought up, and ſo forward in her Inclinations, ſhe could have carried on an Intrigue at an Age when others don't know what the Word means. Ah! ſhe was a notable Wench! ſhe did not ſtart ſo many fooliſh Objections——But let us move along, the Coaſt is clear, and I have been expected above theſe two Hours.

See whether I love you or not; I was to have preferred a young Gentlewoman, my very good Friend, who has long waited for ſuch an excellent Place, to the very Nobleman's where we are going; and what I am now going to do for you, will, perhaps, occaſion a Falling-out between us, which will be to my Loſs; but no Matter, Inclination has a greater Power over me than Intereſt; Having thus ſaid, the old Hag pulled *Lufinette* along

along with her, and I stole out of my Corner, with Intent to see the Issue of this Affair.

It was no hard Matter for me after this Discourse, to judge how the Case stood; had it been in my Power to have knocked out the Brains of the abominable old Witch, I believe I should have done it with Pleasure. However, as it was, I resolved firmly to make her pay dearly for her wicked Designs; and the Fury they put me into convinced me sufficiently by Experience, that Love and Jealousy were inseparable Companions.

We arrived, soon after at the Street *de L—*, where the old Trot knocking at a great House, the Gates were soon opened, and she went in with *Lusnette*. I could have wished to have slept in with them, under the Cover of the Night, but the Gates were shut again so soon after them, that had I attempted it, I should soon have been prevented. I contented myself, therefore, with sitting down on a Stone-Bench that was hard by, where I made a hundred Reflections upon what had passed.

My Vexation thereat caused me to repent a thousand Times my having concerned myself so imprudently, and with so much Eagerness and Precipitation, for the Welfare of a Person, who, according to all Appearance, would soon be so little worthy of my Care and Compassion; my Gold so ill employed, came then into my Head, and made me almost ready to hang myself for my Folly; and I swore bitterly that if *Lusnette* suffered herself to be drawn away, and continued with the old Marquis, I would find some Way to be revenged on her, for having been her Bubble; but what are Gamester's or Lover's Oaths! they

pass away as swift as Lightning, and are as soon forgotten!

In the mean while, I danced Attendance above two Hours, and No-body appeared; let any one imagine the cutting Reflections wherewith I was tortured during that Interval: Ah! undoubtedly, cried I, with that Ill-Humour which Impatience always causes, *Lusnette* has suffered herself to be overcome! Wretch that I am! am not I the Occasion thereof? Ought not I to have discovered myself, when my Name was mentioned; and to have undeceived her, by vowing, that I would never desire any Thing of her, that was inconsistent with the strictest Virtue? A Moment after, I condemned my first Suspicions, on calling to Mind how much against her Will the poor young Maiden had followed the old Sorcerers; and from thence I drew Consequences that were both just and advantageous.

My Thoughts were earnestly employed about all these Circumstances, when my farther Reflections were interrupted by a very piercing Outcry that was made about thirty Paces from the Place where I was sitting; hereupon I cast my Eyes that Way, and saw, by the Light of the Moon, which was then risen, two Men stripping a third, whose bitter Shrieks plainly shewed the Villains were endeavouring to murder him.

Fortunately for me, I was in the Shade, which prevented my being seen, and I had no Arms, which alone hindered me from running to the Assistance of the unfortunate Wretch; all I could do, therefore, was to knock at the Gate of the House, and desire Help. The Porter appeared; and asked what I wanted; I told him what the Miscreants were about: What would

would you have me do therein, cried he, without being at all moved, and shut the Door in my Face.

Being afraid, then, that the Thieves might have discovered me, and would come and dispatch me, after having done the Business of the other, I thundered again a second Time at the Gate, in order to beg Shelter in the House; but it was in vain: Not knowing, therefore, what Course to take, at so dangerous a Juncture, I bethought me of hiding myself under the Stone Bench whereon I sat, hoping the Villains would not come to look for me there.

If ever a Man spent a disagreeable Hour in this World, it was myself, after my having taken this Resolution; for the Murderers, when they had dispatched the wretched unknown before-mentioned, thinking themselves safe in that Bye-Street, came to the Bench under which I lay, and divided their Spoils thereon. What a Dialogue did I then overhear! Good Heavens! I shudder with Horror, every Time I think thereon. It was but short, indeed, but it was so very terrifying, that *Lusnette* might have come out twenty Times, before I should have remembered what Motives had drawn me thither.

As good Fortune would have it, the shocking Crime they had so lately committed, kept the Villains in too great an Alarm, for them to stay long in that Place. The moving of a Leaf, or the least Breath of Wind, is a Scare-Crow to such Wretches, whom just Vengeance pursues; accordingly those Miscreants, thinking they heard a Noise, betook themselves to Flight on a sudden: I began then,

to breathe again, and take Heart; blessing Heaven a thousand Times, for having preserved me from so great and imminent a Danger.

At last, the Moment I had so long waited for, and so earnestly desired, arrived; the Gates opened, and a Coach came out: I rightly judged it was about to carry *Lusnette* and her Companion Home; wherefore I got up behind, very sorry I could not find any Means to convey myself therein. We soon arrived at the Corner of the Street, where the Hotel of the Dutcheſs was ſituated; and the Coach ſtopping there, *Lusnette* and the old Hag got out.

I would fain have followed the Object of my Affections, in order to over-hear ſome Word which might have informed me of what had paſſed; but the curſed old Bedlame, whom I then wiſhed at the Bottom of the Sea, turning about her Head, and perceiving Somebody behind them, made *Lusnette* mend her Pace. I went therefore another Way, finding I could not ſatisfy my Deſire; but muſt wait for a more favourable Opportunity to have my Doubts cleared up.

C H A P.



C H A P. IV.

*What Discourse was overheard in a Tavern ;
and by whom. Likinda suspected to be still
alive.*

I Was returning homewards very melancholy, and, to add to my Misfortunes, had not had any Supper, when passing through a little Street, I saw some Lights in a Tavern, which I had sometimes used ; I knocked, therefore, at it, with Intent to refresh myself ; and, as I had no Company with me, and was a very good Customer, and Paymaster, which is sufficient to procure one Respect in such Places, they made no Difficulty of letting me in, notwithstanding my mean Drefs.

The Drawer shewed me into a little Room, where, notwithstanding the Uneasiness of my Mind, I made a very hearty Supper ; as much in Love as I was, I had an excellent Stomach : I was not like those whining Gallants, who live only upon Sighs and Tears ; in effect, how is it possible, for a consumptive Passion to make a lively Impression ? I will maintain the contrary ; and happy are they, who have the Sense to be of my Opinion.

To return from whence I have digressed, I was washing down the Cares, and Fatigues of the Day, in some excellent *Burgundy* ; when I heard the Voices of some Company pretty near me. I listened therefore, attentively, according to my laudable Custom ; and soon found the Sound
came

came from a Room adjoining to mine, that was only parted from it by a thin Wainscot.

Hereupon, I drew near to it, and by the Help of a Hole, that happened luckily to be bored therein, could distinguish the Persons who were talking together: I found them to be a good jolly-faced Abbot, and a Man of a genteel Appearance, whose Cloaths were laced with Silver. As they both of them spoke very softly, there needed no more to excite my Curiosity; happy Disposition! how much am I indebted to thee! 'Tis to thee I owe all the Felicity I now enjoy!

The mysterious Air with which every Word was accompanied, and the Precautions used by them every Time they spoke, made me easily judge, they were upon somewhat of Importance; and I was ready to die with Impatience, to come at the Bottom thereof; it was some Time, however, before I could gain my Ends, by Reason of the low Voice wherein they talked; but, at last, one of them happening to differ in Opinion from the other, the Person, whose Sentiments were contradicted, raised his Voice a little insensibly.

But what Probability is there, cried this Man, which was he who had the laced Cloaths, that one should be able to find out a Woman, who so industriously, and carefully conceals herself, and in so large a City as this? Might not one as well hope to meet with Conscience in an Usurer? It seems a Thing as impossible to me, as to pick out a Needle from a Bottle of Hay; or to——

Not so fast, said the Abbot, hastily interrupting him; it is not so hard as you imagine; should your Marchioness have actually buried herself in
a Convent,

a Convent, as you suspect, it will not be difficult, by the Prince's Interest, to procure Admittance, into all the Nunneries in the Town. Whatever Precautions she may have used, though she should even have changed her Name, it will not prevent her being found out; her Description alone is sufficient; and to render the Matter yet more easy, one need only add the Day when she disappeared.

Should I grant all this, resumed the Swordsman, what would it avail? The Prince would not be a Jot the more happy. What is that to you, cried the Abbot, interrupting him, provided she is but found again? Was it not her sudden disappearing, that occasioned your Disgrace? And will not there, consequently, be an End thereof, as soon as you have discovered the Place of her Retirement? But his Highness must be prodigiously smitten with this Woman, to concern himself so much for the Loss of her, after he has had such a convincing Proof, by her withdrawing thus from him, and concealing herself with such uncommon Pains, that she does not love him.

Smitten with her, says the Man in laced Cloaths! would you believe it! his Passion has transported him, to that Degree, that he offers to make her his Wife? Any other, but her, would, undoubtedly, have thought herself highly honoured by such a Favour. I could never have imagined, his Love would have carried him so far, answered the Abbot; I was an absolute Stranger to this Circumstance; and admire at the little Vanity there is in this *Venetian*, as she has shewn by this Refusal. Beyond Dispute, she must be prepossessed with a violent Passion for some other; and this is what the Prince ought to endeavour

endeavour at finding out, since he is so desperately in Love with her.

It is indeed, what his Highness at first suspected, rejoined the Swordsman; and, in order to discover the Truth thereof, I was enjoined, being his Confidant, to keep a strict Eye upon all her Actions and Behaviour. That I might be the better able to do this, I procured myself, artfully, to be recommended to his Mistress, as a Steward; having heard, that she wanted one to take Care of her Affairs; which, if it took Effect, would put it in my Power, to give a good Account of her Thoughts, and Way of Life: Accordingly, I flattered myself, I should soon be enabled to satisfy my Master's Views herein; but though I succeeded in this Design, it did not unfold this Mystery, nor inform us of any Thing whereon we could depend.

For three Months together, I watched this *Venetian* narrowly; but could never observe any Thing, that could give me Reason to believe she had an Inclination for any other, unless I should ascribe the Melancholy, wherein she has always seemed to be buried, to some secret Cause, and attribute it to a Disappointment in Love. It is true, I have seen her Tears trickle often down her Cheeks, against her Will; but that was occasioned, as she said, by the Loss of a Brother. What! do we now live in an Age, wherein People are so long inconsolable for the Loss of a Brother?

I frequently reminded the Prince of this Circumstance; who at first, allowed her Sorrow to be well grounded and reasonable; but her persisting so long in her Tears, has induced his Highness, to conceive the most extravagant Thought imaginable; though, indeed, it is not
without:

without Example. He has taken it in his Head, that the *Venetian* may have been in Love with her own Brother, her own Flesh and Blood; and that the Remorse and Shame, caused by this criminal Passion, are the Occasion of the Melancholy and Sorrow, to which she has always been a Prey, ever since we have known her.

All you have said answered the Abbot, may possibly be true; neither was this an impracticable Thing to discover; but ought not you to have found out for certain, who she really is? for, to my Thinking, I have heard you say, you suspect that she conceals both her Name and Extraction? I believe it now more than ever, replied the other; and yet all possible Pains have been taken, not to be deceived therein; but the Accounts which have been sent us, in Answer to our Enquiries, have proved agreeable, almost in every Respect, to what the *Venetian* herself had told us upon that Head.

She had given herself out, as you know, to be the Marchioness *de Viatelli*, whose Husband died in the Service of the Republick of *Venice*; but what confounds and puzzles us is, that the Letters we have received from thence upon this Subject, add that this Marchioness, after whom we enquired, and whom we alledged to be now at *Paris*, actually resides somewhere in *Asia*.

This different Circumstance has perplexed us, for some Time; wherefore, the Prince has endeavoured, to get some Explanation of this Difficulty, from the Marchioness herself: But all he has been able to draw from her, in this Respect, is, that her Husband had a Brother, who now lives in *Asia*; which has induced his Highness, and me, to think it may be of his Wife mention has been made to us in these Letters.

All

All I can judge, from these several Circumstances, resumed the Abbot, is, that this Marchioness is an artful Woman, and of uncommon Sense, who only lets you know what she pleases herself : Wherefore, as my Office does not put it in my Way, to be the Prince's Confidant in his Intrigues, and I am not at the first of this, be so good as to tell me, how his Passion for this lovely Inchantress took its Rise ; this Passage must certainly be curious : That it is indeed, answered the Steward, and even very affecting.

Some Months ago, the Prince returning from Court, and passing by *Cbaillot*, saw a great Number of People, assembled together about a Tavern ; hereupon, he sent one of his Pages, to enquire what occasioned that Crowd ; and to whom a mourning Coach and Six, which seemed concerned in this Adventure belonged. Word being brought his Highness, that it was caused by a foreign Lady of Quality's happening to be taken ill, whom they could not bring again to herself by any Means ; and that every one was the more concerned for her, as she had been a considerable Time in a Swoon, and was a Person of uncommon Beauty ; in effect she was so, for it was the Marchioness.

Upon this News, the Prince, who you know, is full of Humanity, Good-Nature, and Compassion, got out of his Chaise, and went up to the indisposed fair one ; whose surprizing Charms, dead as she seemed to be, struck him that Moment ; and made so strong an Impression upon him, that he has remained her Captive ever since. Accordingly, he used his utmost Endeavours to recover the lovely Marchioness ; and happening to have about him some powerful Drops, that are
almost

almost infallible in Faintings, and having with much ado, got her Mouth open, he poured a few therein ; which she had no sooner swallowed than she opened her Eyes.

Heavens ! What an Effect had their Lustre upon his Heart ! Our Master was immediately inflamed ; and ever since that Hour, has done all that the most passionate or respectful Lover could devise, to obtain a reciprocal Return ; but vain Efforts ! All has proved fruitless ! Nay, the Marchioness has carried her Rigour so far, as to choose rather to conceal herself, with the most indefatigable Industry, than be importuned with the Passion of this illustrious Admirer.

What is most cruel in this unfortunate Adventure, is, that his Highness lays all the Blame of her disappearing upon me ; and tells me, I ought never to have lost Sight of her, since her discarding me ; alledging I might have judged, by the frivolous Pretence, to which she had Recourse, for turning me away, she had some secret Reason for ridding herself of me : In short, all I could say, in my Justification, has availed me nothing, I must either find out this bewitching Marchioness again, or never presume, to venture into his Presence.

Don't you wonder at the uncommon Rigour of my Destiny, pursued the Steward, in a mournful Tone ? How little ought we to depend upon devoting ourselves to great Men ! I have now served in the Prince's Family, thirty Years ; and my Substance is intermingled, by divers Loans, with that of my Master ; I am no longer capable at my Age of betaking myself to any new Course of Life ; and in Return for all my faithful Service, Zeal, and Affection, I am discarded, almost at a Moment's Warning, with Displeasure. How

inhuman is this, after so many Years spent in endeavouring to secure Bread for a numerous Family!

Having thus said, this unfortunate Domestic could not forbear weeping at his hard Fate; whereupon, it is to no Purpose, cried the Abbot, to cast yourself down, and grieve at this Rate; the Prince is naturally good-humoured, and will not persist in doing you any Injustice; it is but a momentary Displeasure, which will soon wear off. Besides, it is by no Means impossible to find out the Marchioness again; you may rely upon my Assistance herein; and I doubt not, by some of the Schemes, whereof I have given you a Hint, to come off with Honour in this Undertaking.

But, supposing none of them should succeed, I will bethink me of some other Expedients; and never fear it, we shall certainly hear, sooner or later, what is become of her. Compose yourself, therefore, and consider well, that the most secret Recesses of *Paris*, as large as it is, may yet be found out, when one has the Key thereof: I have experienced this more than once. These obliging Promises of the Abbot, comforted the Steward a little; wherefore, he thanked him for them, and desired him hastily to be as expeditious as possible in the Performance of them.

I thought, then, the Conversation was ended, for both the Strangers were silent, and seemed each of them to be in a profound Study: I was going therefore, to return to my Seat, and reflect a while thereon, being not a little moved, by what I had overheard; when the Abbot thus resumed the Discourse.

A lucky Thought has just now come into my Head, said he; did not you tell me the Marchioness did not carry off any of her Effects? Has
not

not the Person, who succeeded you in your Place; the Possession thereof? It is impossible but he must keep a Correspondence with his Mistress, in order to give her an Account of her Affairs; why don't you have him narrowly watched? By this Means, we should soon be able to discover what Place of Retirement this artful *Italian* has chosen.

You are mightily mistaken, we shall not be one Jot the nearer, answered the Steward; for, the very first Day after her being missing, I went to her House; and, on Pretence of her being something in Arrears to me, had a pretty Deal of Discourse with my Successor; but he demonstrated to me, by a Writing in due Form, that all in the House belonged to himself; and that he had bought every Thing of the Marchioness, even to her Coach and Horses.

On my continuing to importune him, nevertheless, to give me some Insight what was become of her, he solemnly protested to me, and bound it with an Oath, that he knew no more of her than I; and, thereupon, informed me, what prodigious Care she had taken, and what artful Precautions she had used, to keep herself for ever concealed. He even added, that his Curiosity had prompted him to endeavour at the Discovery himself, but that all his Efforts to that Purpose had proved in vain: That all he could conclude from this her sudden disappearing, in so odd a Manner, that she intended to bury herself in a Nunnery; and, for Fear of being prevented in that her Design, had secured herself from all Enquiries that might be made after her, by the most profound Secrecy.

Just as he had thus said, a Drawer entered the Room, and told the Gentlemen, it was so late,

his Master could not suffer them to stay any longer; upon which they rose up, and the Abbot appointed the other to meet him early next Morning; after which they went out of the Room: I hastened, likewise, out of mine; paid my Reckoning, and hurried out first; with Intent to watch their coming out, follow them, and find out where they lived.

The great Conformity there was between what I had heard from them, and what *Rametzi* had told me, had made a vast Impression upon me; and I was resolved it should not be owing to my own Remissness, that my Suspicions were not removed: It was a Point of too great Consequence to my own Advantage; which I had sufficiently at Heart not to neglect it. The Hundred *Louis d'Ors* were so deeply imprinted on my Memory, that they were continually before my Eyes; so true it is, that Interest is almost always the Motive of all our Actions.

The two Unknown were not long before they came out; nor I before I was at their Heels; their Discourse as they went along was upon the same Subject as in the Tavern; at last they stopt at a stately *Hotel*, too generally known for me to be a Stranger to whom it belonged; The Abbot entered alone therein, and the Steward went to a House not far from it, where, in all Probability, he lived with his Family; and where I left him. From thence I went directly to my own Apartment at the Ambassador's; with a firm Resolution, to be early next Morning at the Gate of that *Hotel*, and not lose Sight of the two Unknown; being fully persuaded I was not deceived in my Conjectures.

Though I had this Affair greatly at Heart, it did not cause me to forget my having others of considerable

considerable Importance : The Visit, I intended to make to *Lusnette*, took up my Thoughts pretty much ; had Reason then had any Power over me I should have banished from my Mind a Passion, which on many Accounts I ought not to have entertained ; but does Reason ever dwell in a Heart, whereof Love has once got Possession ? So far was all I had overheard from extinguishing my Affection for that Object of my Inclinations, that my Jealousy and Anger had rather rendered it more violent ; and I was continually wavering between Hope and Fear.

In effect, that lovely Maiden, being persecuted as she was by Fortune, and perpetually importuned and sollicitated, by an infamous Seducer, might have suffered herself to be led to the Brink of Destruction, but very possibly she might not yet be compleatly ruined. Her Averseness to going along with the old Sorceress, and her long resisting all her diabolical Persuasions, assured me of her Inclinations to Virtue ; there was nothing but downright Want, that could induce her to throw them off ; and Love suggested to me, that, by taking Care of her Maintenance, it would be easy for me, to prevent the Misfortunes, with which she was threatened : All that was to be done, then, was to behave myself with Address, that I might be able to induce her to accept of my Assistance, without letting her know I was informed of her Extremity.

O thou Deity who inspirest us with Love, how astonishing is the Progress thou makest in a Heart ! Who would have thought, that being born and educated as I was, I could have been capable of such Delicacy in my Sentiments ! Strange as it is, however, it is true : and Love works

every Day the same Miracles ; eradicating and extirpating all other Passions, from every Heart, whereof he once gets truly and absolutely Possession.

After having formed many Schemes, in order to the accomplishing this generous Design, I recalled likewise to Mind the Embassador's Affair ; it was necessary to take Care of every Thing, otherwise I might soon see an End of my Treasure ; I was about to have a Family to maintain ; and many Strings to one's Bow are not amiss ; when a Man has once experienced the Misery of Want, it makes him provident and wary ; *Rametz* might fail me, and one must guard against all Things in this Life. The Embassador had promised to take Care of my Fortune, if I was so successful as to answer his Expectation ; this was no Trifle, and he was very punctual ; these were the Reflections that took up my Thoughts, 'till Sleep got Possession of my Eye-Lids.



C H A P. V.

Likinda found again. Bigand goes to Rametzi's, but does not meet with him; his Uneasiness on that Account. Goes out to visit Lufinette. Hears she is discarded by the Dutchess; and knows not where to find her. His Perplexity on that Account. Meets with Lufinette again. In what Place. Delivers her from thence. What a Hazard he runs on that Occasion.

WHEN a Man goes to Bed with his Head full of important Concerns, what Rest he takes is seldom without Uneasiness. Accordingly, I started out of my Sleep at Break of Day, leapt out of Bed, huddled on my Cloaths, (I should have said my Rags, for I was still dressed like a Shoe-Cleaner) and hastened away directly to the *Hotel* of the Prince de —. I had not been there long, before the Steward came to the Gate, knocked thereat, went in, and returned again, within a Quarter of an Hour, together with the Abbot, in one of the Coaches belonging to the Family.

As fatiguing as it was to follow it on Foot, I never lost Sight thereof; it stopped at divers Convents, and I took Advantage of that Respite, to rest myself after my tiresome Journies. Every Time the two Unknown came out, I endeavoured to discover, by their Looks, whether their Search had been successful; the Countenance of the Steward especially was to be depended on, by
Reason

Reason of the great Interest he had in the Issue thereof.

We travelled thus over above Two-thirds of *Paris*, and there was not the least Appearance that their Inquiry had been to their Satisfaction ; by this Time it was Four in the Evening, I began to be prodigious weary, and the Hour approached wherein I hoped to have seen *Lusnette* : I was divided, therefore, between this Desire, and that of waiting to see what would be the Issue of the two Strangers tedious Search.

To add to my Misfortune, I was no longer able to walk ; being worn out both with Fatigue and Hunger ; and I was just watching a favourable Opportunity to refresh myself, when the Coach stopped at the Gate of a Convent which had a most noble Appearance : Thereupon, I laid hold eagerly on that Moment's Respite to enter into a Tavern, which faced the Gate, with Intent there to recruit my exhausted Strength.

Having ordered the Drawer to shew me into a Room that looked upon the Nunnery, and called for what was requisite to suffice Nature, I began greedily to improve the Minutes allowed me for that Purpose, not knowing how few they might be ; but there was no Need of my hurrying, for the Coach waited there a sufficient Time, not only for me to satisfy my craving Appetite plentifully, but to rest myself entirely : This gave me fresh Courage, and revived my drooping Spirits, that began to sink a Moment before under my Fatigue.

In effect, according as the Body is in a good or ill State of Health, the Mind is generally affected ; my Reflections now were no longer so melancholy as before ; and I began to flatter myself that some good Fortune would attend me ; such is our
Way

Way of Thinking; we suffer ourselves to be cast down by the least cross Accident; and upon the least Glimmering of Hope, we flatter ourselves with as little Reason as we were before dejected. In short, we spend our whole Lives in fearing, desiring, weeping, rejoicing, and thinking, sometimes right, and sometimes wrong; such is the Nature of Man: In vain is he well born and bred, deeply learned, and perfectly accomplished; in a Word, what you will, he is liable to all these Impressions.

In the mean while, to return from whence I have digressed, the Coach never moved; this long Stay both surprized me, and gave me Hopes; I drew from thence the most favourable Inferences: At last, the two Unknown appeared; I had then left the Tavern, and was close by the Gate; guess my Joy, when I observed in the Steward's Looks the most evident Marks of an entire Satisfaction, which likewise discovered itself in all his Motions.

They hastened into the Coach, and ordered it to drive directly Home; what would I have given if it had been as easy for me to get in too, and hear their Discourse, as to follow them; my Anxiety would soon have been removed! Being able then to do no better, I ran after them; in Hopes that if the Marchioness *de Viatelly* was found out again, I should get Notice of it by some lucky Circumstance or other, when they alighted at the *Hotel*; nor was I deceived.

Scarce had the Steward got out, before he asked, with an Air that shewed he no longer feared being in Disgrace, whether the Prince was at Home or not; and having been answered that he was just come in before him, he crossed the Court-Yard with an Eagerness, which no longer left me
any

any Doubts. I hastened Home therefore, to the Embassador's, with the utmost Impatience, with Design both to change my Dress, and, as dearly as I loved *Lusnette*, to hurry to *Rametzi*, and inform him of what I fancied I had discovered. My good Intentions, however, were frustrated; in vain did I ring, not a Soul answered; and I was obliged to defer acquainting him with the agreeable News I thought I had to communicate to him, 'till the next Night.

Having thus complied with what I imagined due to Gratitude and my own Interest, I called a Coach and ordered it to drive me to the *Hotel de —*, where *Lusnette* lived. As I was on the Way thither, what *Rametzi* told me, if ever I had any Business with him, came into my Mind; and I was no longer surprized at my not having found him at Home; it would have spared me many fruitless Steps, as well as my Time, which was then precious to me, had I remembered we had agreed, in Case of my wanting to speak with him, I should come only at Ten at Night; at which Hour he would stay in his Apartment, on Purpose to hear me if I rung; because, as he spent his whole Life, either in his Laboratory, or in wandering about the Streets, it would not be possible to meet him, unless I observed this Direction.

I comforted myself, however, for my having forgot this, with the pleasing Expectation of extricating my dear *Lusnette* from all her Troubles, and snatching her from the utter Ruin with which she was threatened: But, how great and terrible was my Surprise, when the *Swiss*, who was Porter, informed me she was quite gone from thence!

Thunderstruck

Thunderstruck at this News, as imagining she was certainly with the old Marquis, I asked him, if he knew where she might be found; and he answered no; but that, as she went away with a Woman, who sold the little Trifles used by Ladies at their Toilets, named *Mademoiselle Flairant*, I might there, perhaps, hear what I seemed so desirous of knowing.

I begged him, then, to oblige me so far as to acquaint me where this Dealer in the Ladies Trinkets lived; but he assured me he was an utter Stranger thereto; and, perceiving me to be concerned at this Answer, advised me to come again next Day, because she used never to fail being at the *Hotel* every Morning; wherefore I might then meet her, and be informed by her of what I so much wanted to know.

Finding I could get no farther Intelligence, I went from thence, heartily grieved at the Fruitlessness of my Labour; and, as it was not yet Time to go to *Rametzi's*, employed this Interval in walking in one of the publick Gardens, wherein I gave myself up to the most cutting Reflections, I no longer doubted *Lusnette's* being lost to me for ever; should I meet with this Woman, said I within myself, being of such a Temper as I know her to be, she will be very far from informing me what is become of that dear Maiden; she is but too sensible of the Influence I have acquired over her, by my generous Behaviour to that charming Beauty, to let me see her: The wicked Designs of that old Hag, whereof I can no longer doubt, and her own personal Interest are too much concerned to keep her from me. Besides, should I again chance to find *Lusnett*, pursued I, could I still look upon her with the same Sentiments as
her

her Virtue had inspired me with, or rather as debauched, and a Prey to a cursed old Bedlame? Have not I all the Reason in the World to believe that——?

Being fully persuaded, then, that all my Labour to this End would be in vain, I went from thence to *Rametzi's*; rung several Times; and waited at the Door above two Hours, to no Purpose; I judged, therefore, that either something extraordinary must have befallen him, or that he must be gone elsewhere, for some Reason for which I could not account; wherefore I again deferred my Visit 'till the next Evening. I spent that Night, then, in the most cruel Anxiety; *Lusnette* was ravished from me; and I had some Cause to fear *Rametzi's* being lost to me, likewise; as he had seemed to me to be too punctual, to be guilty of breaking his Promise ——*.

Whilst I was puzzling my Brain, to what ascribe *Rametzi's* Absence, and how to get Sight again of *Lusnette*, it came into my Head that the most likely Way to find her, was to return to the *Hotel* of the Dutchess, and endeavour to learn from some of her Women where that old Sorceress *La Flairant* lived; it being altogether improbable that all of them should be Strangers thereto. This proved a lucky Thought, and, accordingly, had the desired Success, as I imagined it would; one of her Grace's Women gave me Directions where she lodged; it was in the *Faux-bourg*

* There is a *Hiatus* here, for divers Pages in the *Italian Manuscript*, which is not legible, 'till it comes to a Conversation between *Bigand* and *Lusnette*; we thought, therefore, it would be proper to fill up the Chasm, by substituting some probable Means of bringing them together again, as we have done accordingly.

Bourg St. Marceau; whither I hurried straight-way, with the utmost Impatience.

How timorous is true Love; and what Emotions does it cause in a Breast that is newly smitten! I was seized with a surprizing Palpitation of Heart as I went up the Stairs; and was obliged to stop at every Landing-Place. I arrived at last at the third Story; where I was to hear of the dear Object of my Affections; I knock at the Door; and she opens it herself. I was in Raptures at the Sight of her; but my Joy was soon dashed, and gave Way to Grief; her Eyes are red with Crying; she is all in Sorrow; she has therefore, something that afflicts her; we never weep when our Minds are at Ease.

This Thought pierced me to the Soul; I meet *Lusnette* again, and she is virtuous; her Tears assure me thereof; this Reflection, joined with Pity, and the Sight of my Charmer, all conspire to compleat the Conquest of my Heart; I still adore her, and stretch out my Arms to embrace her: Ah! Sir, cried she, starting back from me, fly from this Place, and leave me, I am the most wretched Creature that ever was in the World; having thus said, she withdrew to the farther End of the Room, and burst into a Flood of Tears.

I follow her, and being pierced to the Soul, at the Condition wherein I find her; for Heaven's Sake, said I, acquaint me with the Misfortunes that have befallen you; you don't know to what a Degree I am affected, with whatever concerns you! Can you any longer question?—No, Sir, cried the dear Maiden, interrupting me hastily, but for Pity's Sake, speak softly; or rather be-gone from this cursed Place; you are not safe here, pursued she trembling.

How! cried I, without being in the least daunted, what is it you tell me? And why do you a stay a Moment in a Lodging, which you own is so suspicious? Alas! Does it depend upon me, answered *Lusnette*? The Cruelty of my Destiny, which is obstinately bent upon persecuting me, has only delivered me from one Ruin, to thrust me upon another. But the Time is too precious to be spent in telling you the Particulars of this mournful Story; leave me, I beseech you, I tremble every Joint of me, for Fear that Woman, whom you saw with me, on that Day which was rendered remarkable by your generous Goodness, should surprize you here; she is within three Steps of us.

Knowing her so well as I do, and what she is capable of attempting, (you may believe me, by the Terror wherein you see me) upheld as she is here, in this House, which is full of People of her own Kidney, you would not be the strongest: Farewel, Sir, you concern yourself in vain for me; I am an undone Creature; it is now too late to think of—.

How! cried I out, interrupting her with Emotion, have you suffered yourself to be overcome by ill Counsel? And, is it possible, your Virtue should have fallen a Prey to—Ah! Sir, resumed *Lusnette*, that is not the Case; I have been able to resist all hitherto; and will die before I will consent to any Thing that is indecent; but I know all your good Intentions, in my Behalf, will not avail at all; and I am sensible of the Danger you are in every Moment, wherefore——It does not daunt me in the least, answered I, interrupting her; let us not lose such precious Moments in useless Discourse; follow me.

Ah!

Ah! Sir, what do you desire? We should both be undone, cried *Lusnette*, interrupting me, and frightened to Death at my Proposal! I am very sensible of your Goodness; your Favours are deeply engraven on my Heart; and it is my sincere Gratitude for your uncommon Generosity, that induces me to redouble my Intreaties to you, to make haste, from hence; for, as to my own Part——

Away, pursued I, with a little Passion, what means this Obstinacy, in resolving to stay, in a Place you confess to be so liable to Reproach? What Authority detains you here? And why will you not take Advantage of the fortunate Opportunity now offered? Would you induce me to think that——Heavens! How unhappy am I, cried this dear Angel, since you so greatly misconstrue what I have said? Alas! the Offer you make me would crown me with Happiness; but my Gaoler, Mademoiselle *Flairant*, has protested to me, with so many bitter Oaths, that, if ever I attempted, in the least, to run away, she would murder me without Mercy, and hack me in Pieces; and I know so well what she is capable of doing, that it is this causes my Fright, and occasions my starting so many Objections.

And I am absolutely resolved, said I, to deliver you from this slavish Tyranny; I fear nothing; the Danger is in going down Stairs; I have Pistols in my Pocket; and, as soon as we are in the Street, it will all be over. Having thus premised, I took *Lusnette* by the Arm, and speaking in a sharp Tone, obliged her to come along with me. We have hesitated too long already, continued I, making her go down the Stairs before me; whilst we have been disputing upon this Head, we should have been in a Place of Security.

At last we got to the Street-Door, without meeting with any Obstruction; and *Lusnette* was already seated in the Coach; when, by the most vexatious ill Luck imaginable, the Coachman was no where to be found: In vain did I call him divers Times, No body answered; Search was made for him also in all the Publick Houses round about, but it was all to no Purpose. This set *Lusnette* a trembling; we shall be discovered presently cried she; *La Flairant* and her Neighbours will be too hard for us; and, if that happens, I am undone.

On saying thus, I saw her in such a Terror, and conceived so bad an Opinion of all the People, who lived in this little By-street, their very Looks seeming to me very suspicious (and Prejudice goes a great Way) that, without considering I was in a Habit, which suited but ill with the Part I was about to act, and having no Regard to any Thing, but what might be the Consequences of this Delay, I got into the Coach-Box, and driving on the Horses full Gallop, was hastening from that cursed Place, as fast as possible.

Little By-Lanes and Streets are generally inhabited by Numbers of poor People, and Children; besides which, one meets frequently with Stops there; accordingly, no sooner did the Coach move along, but a great Mob were at our Heels, and pursued us with continual Hootings: Look there, look there, cried they, behold that Abbot, who is running away with a pretty Wench; I drove on, however, with the utmost Speed; though not without being moved at these perpetual Outcries.

To add to my Uneasiness, as the Noise increased at every Step, I fancied the hopeful Neighbours,

Neighbours, of whom *Lusnette* had told me, were following us, to wrest my Prey from me; and I was the more confirmed in this Opinion, because, in the midst of all the different Clamours, I could hear a Voice, which called out distinctly, Stop that Abbot, Stop him; Stop that Coach there.

Nevertheless, in Spite of all their Hollowing, I should soon have been rid of all my Fears and Trouble, had it not been for an unlucky Hackney, against whose Wheels I happened to hitch in my Hurry; which cross Accident gave the Populace Time to overtake us, and redouble their Hootings; for the Mob always grow bolder, and more insolent by Degrees, when one does not curb their Impudence, at first, by threatening and chastizing them. As an Aggravation to my Misfortune, I received a Lash with his Whip a-cross my Face, from the Fellow, whose Coach I was near overturning, by the Violence where-with I ran against it; which Injury, however, did not anger me so much, as the coarse Epithet he tacked to my Title of Abbot.

I was heartily vexed thereat; and should have chastized the Rascal, had I been alone; but Love induced me to swallow this bitter Pill, as, indeed, he makes us swallow many others: At the same Moment, up came the Coachman, whose Seat I had taken; and, getting into the Box, forced me rudely from thence; asking me, very roughly, how I durst have the Impudence to drive away with his Horses, and telling me plainly, he would be paid what was due to him, and would send me to the Devil, into the Bargain: Whereupon, a Journeyman Shoemaker, who passed, no Doubt, for a Wit, amongst his Neigh-
G 3
bours,

bours, interrupted him ; and said, there was no Need of troubling himself to send me thither ; for I was going there fast enough, without his Assistance.

In the Perplexity I was then in, I could think of no better Expedient, than to clap a Crown into the Fellow's Hand ; and promise him as much more, to drink, if he would deliver us from this Uproar and Confusion : This lucky Thought made such an Impression upon him, that he became as gentle as a Lamb ; opened the Coach Door ; gave me a Squeeze by the Hand ; and, by an expressive Wink, let me know my Commands should be punctually obeyed.

Before he got upon his Box, he acquainted me ; that he saw a Woman pursuing after us, who seemed to have some ill Design against me ; and cried out, I was running away with her Daughter ; but that it would be her best Way to oil her Limbs well ; for he would lead her a fine Dance. In effect, he was no sooner mounted than he drove away at a great Rate ; the Woman of whom he had spoken, and who was *La Flairant* herself, following hard after us, and filling the whole Street with her Clamours.

Accordingly, I was afraid, each Moment, that we should be stopped again ; especially by two Men, in Soldiers Cloaths, who accompanied that old Hag ; and who ran so very fast, that I trembled every Minute, for fear we should be exposed to some new Affront. In order to gain the Populace over to their Side, and induce them to get before the Horses, and stop them, they cried out aloud, as we might hear from the Coach, that an Abbot was forcing away the poor Woman's Daughter, who was pursuing us.

This

This Outcry, no Doubt, at the long Run, would have had the desired Effect; but fortunately for us, another Woman, who was no Friend to *La Flairant*, and who knew her full well, declared, that she had no Children, but such unhappy Wretches, as she adopted for her own; that she was an infamous Creature, who had already been punished for her disorderly Life; and that it would not be long, before she was again sent to the Place from whence she came, if she persisted in her ill Courses.

This her just Character, so seasonably given, turned the Outcries and Hootings of the Populace against *La Flairant*, and her Abettors; and I had the Pleasure, from the Coach-Door, of seeing myself revenged on her, for all the Affronts and Vexations she had caused me to suffer; the Mob leaving off their Pursuit of us, to divert themselves at the Expence of that old Bedlam; and the Coach turning, soon after, down another Street, we were as quiet, in a little Time, as if nothing at all had happened to us.

The Coachman having then driven us a little farther, full Speed, and finding we had no longer any Disturbance to fear, stopt a while, that his Horses might recover their Breath; and getting off his Box, asked me, whither I would have him go. I was just about to make him an Answer, when, casting my Eyes upon *Lusnette*, I perceived her to be in a Swoon; and, being afraid this Fainting might be attended with ill Consequences, had her carried into a Tavern, that was in the Neighbourhood, and laid upon a Bed; where she had not been long, before she entirely recovered her Senses.

As soon as she was come to herself, she asked me, whether the Place, to which I had then brought.

brought her, was the Lodging designed for her ; whereupon I told her, how the Case stood ; she answered, she found herself much better ; and was very sorry, I had not carried her intirely out of that Neighbourhood ; I was not able to acquaint you with this my Desire, pursued she, because the continual Dread I was under, of falling again into the Hands of that vile Woman *La Flairant*, whom I had so much Reason to fear, deprived me of the Use both of my Speech and Senses.

Being entirely studious of pleasing her, I assured her, she should be rid in a little Time of all her Uneasinesses ; and being willing to keep my Word, got again into the Coach ; ordering the Fellow to drive us to the *Palais Royal*, which was about three Miles from the Place where we were, without giving him any other particular Direction. This long Stretch made the Coachman mutter ; which putting me out of Humour, in my Turn, after my having used him so generously, I paid him off, and hired another ; which carried us thither, without any Words.

I was very glad, the Distance between the two Places, allowed me Time to consider, where I should look for a Lodging for my new Charge ; my Abbot's Habit made me foresee many Difficulties therein ; and whatever Care I took, to hide my Uneasiness, from that charming Creature, who strove to express her Gratitude in the most lively Terms, I answered her with so much Distraction of Mind, that she plainly perceived all was not right.

Hereupon, tell me, Sir, said she, with the most engaging Air, in the World, what it is disturbs you ? Something disturbs your Peace ; and I durst

durst lay any Wager, it is on my Account ; confess freely what it is that troubles you ; and, perhaps, I may be able to contribute towards restoring your Quiet . In short, she urged me with so much Earnestness, that I owed to her what occasioned all my Thoughtfulness.

I imagined as much, replied *Lusnette* ; but this Difficulty is easily got over ; I have a Brother, pretend yourself to be so ; tell ingenuously, who I am, and from whence I came ; notwithstanding the ill Fortune, that persecutes me, I believe myself not to be so little esteemed at the Dutchess *De ———*'s, that I need fear their giving an indifferent Character of me ; and I am satisfied, by this Means, no one will scruple admitting me as a Lodger. When I am once settled, my Life shall be so retired and sedentary, that I dare flatter myself with the Hopes, of not being obliged to remove from any Place where I have been entertained.

This lucky Thought gave me a great deal of Satisfaction ; and as one Piece of good Fortune seldom comes without being followed by another, I recalled to Mind, soon after, that I had breakfasted, a little before, with one of my Acquaintance, at a Lodging, where the Landlady, not only seemed to be very complaisant, but had desired me, in the Way of Discourse, to recommend her House to any of my Friends, whenever an Opportunity should offer ; and assured me, they should be treated with the greatest Civility and good Usage. In effect, I knew she had divers Women-Lodgers ; and was very obliging to them, if they behaved themselves well ; wherefore, I informed *Lusnette*, thereof ; and it having been resolved, that she should fix there, the
Coachman

Coachman was ordered to drive us thither directly.

The Landlady received us very graciously; and shewed her a very decent and convenient Lodging. I agreed with her both for that and for her Board; according to the Desire of *Lusnette*; that she might have it in her Power to live as retired as she pleased; and, that the Woman might have a good Opinion of her new Lodger, I paid her for three Months beforehand.

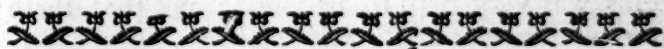
This had so great an Effect upon her, that she assured me she would have all imaginable Care of my pretended Sister; for Fear, however, my dear *Lusnette* should be taken for a Wanderer, on Account of her having brought Nothing with her, I said her Trunks would come next Day; being resolved to supply her Want of Cloaths and Linen, in case we should not be able to recover her's from *La Flairant*, who had taken Care to get them all into her Possession the very first Morning after she had made sure of her Person. The Landlady having then shewn us all the Conveniences and Accommodations of her Apartment, took her Leave of us, and withdrew.*

Being then no longer under any Restraint, thank Heaven, said I to the lovely *Lusnette*, you are now delivered from all the Dangers you had so much Reason to apprehend; no Care nor Uneasiness need disturb your Mind for the future; and you may pass your Days in an uninterrupted Tranquillity, 'till you are disposed to crown the Happiness of a Man whose sole Study is to seem agreeable to you.

Alas!

* From Page 71 to here, is what we have thought proper to substitute instead of what was wanting in the original Manuscript.

Alas! cried *Lusnette*, with a melancholy Air, what do you say? Heaven knows I am still very far from being likely to enjoy that Peace of Mind; you cannot imagine how much I am the Sport of Fortune; but you will soon be convinced thereof: I am too greatly obliged to you, to make my unhappy Circumstances any Secret to you; though I never yet acquainted any one therewith; but I should be the most ungrateful Creature in the World, if I should scruple to give you this Proof of my Confidence; I am persuaded you will take it kindly of me; and, indeed, it is no small Argument of my good Opinion of you. I do not pretend hereby to make you set the greater Value upon my Complaisance; but the Story of my Life is so extraordinary, so surprizing, and so hard to be believed, that, were it not for your being so fortunately prepossessed in my Favour, as you have shewn by a hundred Proofs, I would never venture to relate it to you with all its Circumstances.



C H A P. VI.

The Story of Lucani, a famous Painter. The extraordinary Circumstances that attended his Marriage. A noble Example of Virtue, and a disinterested Temper in a Mother. It does not go unrewarded.

LUCANI, a celebrated Painter at Rome, continued *Lusnette*, had already arrived to a very advanced Age, before any one could prevail upon him to submit to the Marriage Yoke; how advantageous soever the Matches were that were offered,

ferred, he still persisted stedfastly in his Resolution; and coloured over his Denials with the civil Pretence, that it was impossible to belong to two Masters, but one or the other of them would be ill served; and that to him, the Publick and his own Reputation supplied the Place, the one of a Wife and the other of a Mistress.

Nevertheless, with all these fine Maxims, he was forced to yield; as all those fine Boasters have done, who have valued themselves upon a philosophical Heroism. The God of Marriage, nettled at a too long Resistance, had Recourse to Love to revenge his Quarrel; even whilst he was most intent upon his Work, he wounded him with the most dangerous of his Arrows.

He was employed in painting the Gallery of the *Ursini*; and as amongst the other Figures, he was desirous of placing a *Venus* therein which should surpass any Thing of the Kind that had ever been drawn before, he was in great Want of a living Original from whom to copy so finished a Piece. This was very hard to be found; not that there was any Scarcity of Beauties at *Rome*, but the Difficulty was, to meet with those who would condescend to his Design; for some of them being rich, or of an illustrious Birth, it was of Course absolutely impracticable even to mention this Proposal to them; and they who were of a meaner Rank, though not in the most easy Circumstances, refused out of Decency alone, the generous Offers that were made them,

About three Months had *Lucani* used all possible Means to procure what he desired, without being able to succeed therein; when at last, one Day, a poor Woman in Years came to ask for him, with a young Maiden, her Daughter, who was just in her Bloom, and a matchless Beauty; whom

whom she offered to let sit at a certain Price, for which she stipulated each Time. *Lucani* being in Haste to finish his Work, and in great Want of a living Original whence to copy his *Venus*, readily agreed to the Terms; and immediately struck a Bargain with the Woman, who, nevertheless, would not consent to her Daughter's sitting, but on Condition of being always present herself.

This was too reasonable a Demand to admit of any Dispute; accordingly *Lucani*, who was himself a Lover of Virtue, thought the better of her, for this prudent Precaution: and Esteem is an Omen very favourable to Love. The Painter was struck with the surprizing Beauty of *Cbebella*, (that was the young Maiden's Name) and did not doubt but with such a Masterpiece of Nature for a Pattern, he should be able to draw such an inimitable *Venus*, as should put the finishing Hand to his own Reputation.

The first Sittings were employed about the Head, with which, when done, *Lucani* was himself so charmed, that he made no Question, if the Rest was answerable to this admirable Beginning, his Work would be entirely perfect, and without Fault; But he little expected the Obstacles he had to surmount; or imagined his Vanity, in resolving to make a finished Piece, would in the End cost him both his Repose, and his Life.

When the Time came that he was to set about the Body of his *Venus*, he would have required of *Cbebella* what is usual in such Cases; but the Mother of that beauteous Maiden gave him to know she was not of a Humour, to suffer her Daughter to transgress the Laws of Decency, for all the Riches in the Universe; and that she meant all along, when she made her Bargain, that she should

fit to him no other wise than was consistent with the Rules of Modesty.

In vain did *Lucani* insist upon her conforming herself, to what was customary on such Occasions; and laugh at her Scruples as ridiculous; the Mother kept her Resolution; and, in order to convince him she did not start these Objections on Account of Interest, or with the View of inciting him to raise his Price; for she suspected this was the Notion of *Lucani*, (because he offered her a considerable Sum more than he had agreed for before, to induce her to comply with his Request) she carried her Daughter away; telling him, as she was going out, since he thought her capable of suffering herself to be corrupted by sordid Interest, neither her Daughter nor herself would ever set Foot again within his Doors. It was to no Purpose for *Lucani*, to persist in his Sollicitations, or to use his Endeavours to detain her at his House, all his Attempts were fruitless; *Chebella's* Mother kept her Word with him punctually.

What cannot Pride and Vain-Glory effect upon the Mind of Man! *Lucani*, nettled to the last Degree, to see his Work put to a Stand by the Obstinacy of *Chebella's* Mother, which he termed Cruelty and Folly, resolved to make one last Effort to prevail upon her. To this End, he went to her Lodging, with Intent to offer a Price so very considerable, she should at last be tempted by it. Fully determined then to spare no Cost to succeed in his Design, he repaired to her Lodging; but little did he think that Love lay there in Ambush for him, and he was going to make him a Sacrifice of his so long and so high prized Liberty.

Chebella happened to be alone, and *Lucani* was as much surprized at her Beauty, and as much struck at the Sight of her, as if his intense Application

cation to taking an exact Copy of her had deprived him of all other Thoughts whatsoever: The Moment he beheld her, he forgot all he had to say; and only entertained her with the powerful Effects her Charms had made upon his Heart. *Chebella* answered this Gallantry with Abundance of Wit, and her Conversation completed her Conquest.

The less Power the Passions have had upon the Soul of a Man, the greater Havock they make there, when once they have gained Admittance therein. Such a Heart, like the principal Stone which supports a vaulted Roof, and cannot be moved, but the whole Building totters, nay is in Danger of falling to the Ground the Moment it is taken away; such a Heart then, we say, being once put out of its natural Temper, hurries along with it all the other Faculties that are subordinate thereto.

Just so it was with *Lucani* at that Time; his Desire of establishing his own Reputation and Fame gave Way, in an Instant, to that of seeming agreeable in the Eyes of the bewitching *Chebella*: nor was it long before he was as earnestly covetous of being the Possessor of such an invaluable Pleasure: He judged very rightly that this would be no hard Matter to effect. He was rich, immensely rich, and eminent in his Profession; whereas *Chebella* had no other Fortune than her Beauty; upon mature Consideration, therefore, he concluded, it would be no great while before he was happy in the Enjoyment of the Object of his Affections.

Accordingly, as her Mother came Home, he pretended the Occasion of his making them that Visit, was to desire of them the Favour to spend the Afternoon with him; because he wanted to

add some new Graces to the Head of his *Venus*, which he could not do, without having his Original before him. This Request was too reasonable to admit of any Refusal; and he had paid too well for all their former Visits, for them to make any Difficulty of granting this. Accordingly, the Mother readily agreed thereto; and assured him it had not been without Regret she had seen herself reduced to the Necessity of refusing to comply with his Desires. *Lucani* affected to wave this Subject, and answered he had found a Way to get an Original entirely to his Wish; within a short Time, to have at his Disposal; this said, he took Leave of them with a seeming Indifference, and went away.

This Speech and Behaviour induced the Mother of *Chebella* to suspect the Painter had met with less Difficulty in procuring an Original elsewhere, and had a Mind to shew them his *Venus* finished, in order to punish them for their scrupulous Nicety in refusing him; and convince them he could have done as well without them. Little did she imagine, how greatly she was to be concerned in the Issue of this Affair; there are some Events, some of the Dispensations of Providence, which are so very surprizing, it is absolutely impossible to foresee them: Such was that I shall presently relate.

Lucani received his invited Guests in a Closet, where all that is most costly and rare was displayed to their View. As soon as the first Civilities were over, he rose up; and taking the Mother of *Chebella* by the Hand, made her observe all his most valuable Curiosities. This done, he opened a beautiful Cabinet, and drawing out a Number of fine Jewels, almost dazzled their Eyes with their Lustre; after this he opened a rich Bureau, and pulling

pulling out from a large Bundle of Papers, a List of all his Bonds, Mortgages, Deeds in Writings, in short of all his Riches, but what was in ready Money, Jewels, or Furniture, submitted it to her Perusal. Having thus done, he told her all that was in that Cabinet should be hers, if she would grant him the Favour he had desired; adding that eight Days would be sufficient for him compleatly to finish his *Venus*; that he would keep her Secret inviolably; and she had nothing to do, but to resolve one Way, or the other.

The artful Painter having tempted them with this Offer, and seeing plainly that the Greatness thereof made some Impression on their Minds, was determined to try how far Interest would prevail. To this End, leading them to a Table covered over with a Cloth, he took the Covering off on a sudden, shewed them the Whole overspread with Gold, and let that bewitching Metal glisten in their Eyes. Now choose, said he, which you will, the Money or my other Revenues; there is no Difference in the Value; but the Gold may be delivered with the most Ease.

During this critical Interval, *Lucani's* Eyes were stedfastly fixed, sometimes upon the Mother, and sometimes upon the Daughter. *Chebella* held down her Head and blushed; which Sign, as it might be interpreted either Way, the Painter, already prepossessed by her Charms, put the most favourable Construction thereon; but the Mother absolutely refused it; and growing distrustful of herself, she took her Daughter by the Hand, and leading her away, cried let us be gone, Child, the Conflict is too dangerous, and Honour ought to carry it from all the Riches in the Universe.

Lucani, touched to the very Soul with such an uncommon and noble Instance of disinterested Virtue, in a Mother, ran after the Fugitives; and falling upon his Knees before them; Stay, Madam, said he to the Mother, in a moving Tone; all the Riches, I have just now displayed before you, are yours; I had resolved to make you lawful Mistress of them, before I made you the Proposals, which so justly caused your Resentment, and Flight: Forgive the base Attempt; it was not occasioned by any criminal Intent; but I was desirous, of being convinced, with my own Eyes, that there is still Virtue remaining upon the Earth; and also of having undeniable Reason to respect you, as long as I have Breath.

Had you even suffered yourself to have been prevailed on, by the powerful Charms of such strong Temptations, as I laid before you, I should not have altered my Resolution; I should have lamented your Weakness, but should, nevertheless, have declared myself: Yes, Madam, continued *Lucani*, kissing her Hand, and obstinately refusing to rise, 'till he had ended his Speech. I adore your incomparable Daughter; consent to her being mine; and share with her, in all the Happiness I will study to procure her, if you enter into my Views, with as much Sincerity as myself.

Surprized, to the last Degree, at the unexpected Conclusion of this Discourse, the Mother of *Chebella* discovered her Astonishment, by her excessive Joy; she tenderly loved her Daughter; and the Offer was too advantageous, to admit of a Minute's Hesitation; every Thing was, therefore, agreed on in an Instant; and the necessary Orders being given directly, for the Celebration of their Nuptials, in about a Week's Time, *Lucani*

cani was put in Possession of his beloved Original.

During five or six Years, that the Mother lived, the Painter and his Wife enjoyed an uninterrupted Happiness; and a fine Boy, which *Cbebella* brought him, seemed a Sort of Pledge of its Continuance. The entire Esteem *Lucani* had conceived for his Mother-in-Law, had in a Manner extinguished that Propensity to Jealousy, which seems almost to be born with all *Italians*; but, as soon as she was dead, that unfortunate Temper revived in him.

Cbebella was lively, merry, and a Lover of Pleasure; and though she was descended of a most virtuous Family, and had been very strictly educated, she discovered an Inclination, of which her Husband took but too much Notice. In short, the Lovers whom her Beauty drew about her, the nightly Serenades, with a thousand other Gallantries, wherewith *Cbebella* continually seemed to be but too well pleased, disturbed *Lucani*, to that intolerable Degree, that to secure himself, at once from the Uneasiness, which tortured him perpetually Day and Night, he resolved to keep his Wife locked up close; and he had Recourse to this mortifying Expedient, every Time his Business obliged him to go out. But, alas!

*Your Wives, and Daughters virtuous, say the Wise,
To make, nor Locks, nor Iron Bars suffice;
Women grow worse, the more they are confined;
The only Guard of Virtue, is the Mind.*

One would think hitherto, continued the charming *Lusnette*, looking at me with the loveliest Eyes imaginable, that I am not, in the least, concerned, in any of these Passages I have now
been

been relating; alas! you will be able to judge but too soon, how greatly I am interested therein: We are just coming to the fatal Place; how dear will it cost me to relate it! Merciful Heavens! why was not I left a Stranger to my Fate? At least, it would have saved me from blushing many a Time, with Confusion, at the dreadful Circumstances, that attended my Birth! On saying this, the melancholy Remembrance extorted Tears from *Lusnette's* beauteous Eyes; I sympathized with her; and could not help letting her see, how nearly her Sorrow affected me; she took Notice thereof; thanked me for my kind Concern; fetched a deep Sigh; and thus went on with her Story.



C H A P. VII.

The Danger of using a Wife ill. The Spouse of Lucani, her Patience being tired out, endeavours, at last, to find some Way of mitigating the Rigour of her Confinement; and unfortunately succeeds therein. She falls in Love with her own Brother, without knowing it. An extraordinary Machine invented, to facilitate an Interview between them. Lucani discovers the Intrigue. His Rage thereat.

THINGS were in this Situation, when Chance, which produces so many extraordinary Events, brought back from *England*, just at this Juncture, a Brother of *Cbebella's*; who had entered very young, into the Service of a *Roman Nobleman*, that had long been abroad, on Embassies at foreign Courts. This young Man, whose

whose Name was *Corbini*, by Length of Time, faithful Service, and much Merit, was become Comptroller of his Master's Household; and had always behaved himself with such Discretion, that he was his chief Favourite, and had the Direction of all his Affairs.

The Embassador, after many Years Absence, foreseeing he should have Leave, in a short Time, to return to his native Country, ordered *Corbini* to set out for *Rome* before him, and prepare every Thing there for his Reception. The Comptroller, therefore, ever studious to please his Master, not satisfied with having his Master's Palace put into exceeding good Repair, was willing to surprize him with something new, and, accordingly, knowing him to be mighty fond of fine Painting, he resolved to employ one of the ablest Hands to beautify a Gallery, which had always been so much neglected, that his Excellency never set Foot therein; in effect, it lay in such Disorder, it was not fit to be seen by any one.

Corbini, then, after having had this Gallery put into good Order, acquainted the Architect of whom he had made use, for repairing and adorning the Palace, with his Design of having it embellished with fine Drawings; and desired him to point out the most celebrated Master for that Purpose. The Architect immediately named *Lucani*; and *Corbini* being determined to spare neither Cost nor Pains, not only to procure the best of Hands, but to have it finished with the utmost Expedition, readily agreed to his Demands; though he had then sullied his Reputation by the Character of being very exorbitant in his Prices. To put him into the better Humour, *Corbini* paid him
down

down beforehand 'Twenty Thousand *Roman* Crowns, with which *Lucani* was so highly delighted, that after having made the necessary Preparations for so considerable a Work, he set about it the very next Week, with a firm Resolution, not to give over, 'till the whole was entirely completed.

But, though the self-interested *Lucani* might find his Account in this Undertaking, it was not the same with the unfortunate *Chebella*; before this Time she had enjoyed some Moments Liberty; *Lucani*, who still adored her, would be always providing some Amusement; and, as he stayed pretty much at Home, never confined her under Lock and Key, unless when he went abroad; which was not often. But the Case was very different, from the Time of his undertaking the Gallery, where he was obliged to be from Morning 'till Night; her Confinement was then continual, without any Intervals to lessen the Rigour of her Destiny.

In effect, three Months had already elapsed, without her seeing any End to her Troubles; she imagined this new Course of Life would last for ever, and took on grievously; at last, growing out of all Patience, and perfectly desperate at such Usage, which she called insupportable, and did not think she had any Ways deserved; she resolved to make her Escape from him, if ever a favourable Opportunity should offer. For a Woman to desire aught, and to endeavour to satisfy that Desire, is one and the same Thing; accordingly, it was so with *Chebella*; and, unfortunately for her, it was not long before she found the Means to gratify her Wish.

One Day, as she was casting her Eyes mournfully all over her Room, and studying to render
all

all her Husband's Vigilance entirely useless, and of no Service, her Uneasiness induced her to lift up the Hangings in her Apartment, and search narrowly with a Taper in her Hand, whether Chance would not direct her to some Place, by which she might get away: In vain, however, had she ferretted all about her Chamber; she could not meet with any Thing that seemed likely to favour her Design; insomuch that being quite fatigued with the Pains she had taken, she was going to resolve upon resting herself contented, when it came into her Head to rummage all over her Closet, which was very large, as she had about her Apartment.

Her Perseverance did not prove in vain; upon looking behind a Capital Picture, which reached from the Cieling to the Floor, she found an old Door, of which no Use had been made for many Years, and which was only fastened up by an Iron Hook, almost eaten through with Rust. She was transported with Joy at this Discovery; and taking up the first Thing that came to Hand, to break it open, she found it no hard Matter to effect it; which done, she was again overjoyed with the View of a small Pair of Back-Stairs, contrived within the Wall (which was very thick) that carried her up to another little Closet, whose Window had no Bars, and looked into the Street. This Sight filled her with Satisfaction! she beheld it with Pleasure; being fully persuaded from that very Moment, that sooner or later, it would be the Means of recovering her Liberty.

It was so late, when she met with this Success, that she rightly judged it would be very imprudent, by a long Stay, to run the Hazard of being surprized by her Husband; she returned, therefore,

therefore, into her Bed-Chamber with her Head full of pleasing Reflections, upon her so welcome Discovery; the least Glimpse of Hope rejoices and elevates the Mind, when one is unhappy. Scarce had *Lucani* set his Foot out of Doors next Morning, before *Cbebella* hastened to the Place so newly found out, and looked around her upon all the neighbouring Houses, to see whether she could not set Eyes on any one who might be likely to contribute towards her Escape. Long had she been thus employed in vain; when at last she observed in a House facing hers a young Man in a Night-Gown, who seemed reading with great Attention; and immediately pitched upon him, in her own Mind, to be her future Deliverer.

The Stateliness of the House, with some rich Furniture she could discern therein, made her justly conclude it belonged to some Nobleman; but her Imagination not stopping there, she also pleased herself with the Fancy, that the Unknown was the Master thereof; and that he was a Person of the greatest Distinction. Taking this for granted, she did not despair of his falling in Love with her, if she could but once draw his Eyes upon her. In this Case, she resolved to get acquainted with him; confess to him ingenuously, how barbarously and tyrannically she was used; which she likewise concluded would not fail of moving her new Lover, and give him an Opportunity of offering her his Assistance, of which she was fully determined readily to accept, in her melancholy Condition; which, in her Opinion, was a sufficient Warrant for her to proceed to the utmost Extremities.

Women are very apt to flatter themselves, and depend mightily on the Power of their Charms; and *Cbebella* had more Reason than any one, to
hope

hope for every Thing from hers; however, that she might not miss of a Conquest, which was of so much Importance to herself, she thought it would not be ill-judged, to set off her natural Beauty, with all the Advantages which could heighten its Lustre. Struck with this Thought, she hurried to her Dressing-Room; seated herself at her Toilet; and adorned herself with every Thing that could most attract the Sight, and render her most killing.

This she did without any Uneasiness, not being in the least afraid of being surprized by her Husband, whom she had been long used not to see at Home, till Nine at Night. The handsomer a Woman is, the sonder she is of her Toilet; the Looking-Glass being a secret Flatterer, whose Praises she receives with Pleasure, and from which, therefore, she removes as little as possible.

Accordingly, *Chebella* being satisfied with her own Charms, and fully persuaded, that the Pains she had taken to adorn herself would not be in vain, returned to the favourite Window, in Hopes that Chance would induce the young Man to cast his Eyes upon her. But she was disappointed in her Expectation; for he was so intent upon his Book, and so little did he look off from it; that she judged she must not depend upon it; unless she could find some Means, to divert him from his profound Attention to his Reading.

Women are very eager in their Desires; and yet more so in *Italy*, than in any other Place; Accordingly, *Chebella*, being quite out of Patience at the great Composure of Mind wherewith the young Man applied himself to his Book, and resolving if possible, to divert him from it, and draw his Eyes upon herself, began to sing loud enough to be over heard by him. This had the

desired Effect; for the Unknown, struck with the Harmony of a Voice, to which he had never before been used, raised up his Head; look'd around him; saw the Wife of *Lucani*; and was so much transported with her Charms, that he threw down his Book; got up; and gave her to understand, by a most respectful Bow, and an expressive Sign he made to her, at the same Time, how greatly he was transported with her Beauty.

Talking with the Fingers, is as common in *Italy*, and is as easily understood in those hot Climates, as the Declarations, which are here said to be made by your Beaux in these Countries; however, that be, these new Lovers were not disagreeable to each other; accordingly, young *Corbini*, (for he was the Gallant) being as handsome for a Man, as *Chebella*, for a Woman, found no great Difficulty in bringing her to his Beck, she being willing enough to be persuaded by him; and *Lucani*, notwithstanding all his Bolts and Bars, was outwitted by them.

An old Husband, who is jealous, is like a Gardener who has the Growth of one particular favourite Plant at Heart, and neglects all the Rest for it; he is observed to be continually employed in examining how it thrives, and no sooner is sensible he may be envied the Possession thereof, than his Fear of being deprived of it, makes him carefully watchful how to preserve it: But, in vain is all his Care and Uneasiness! A Neighbour who has long guessed at the Value of this Plant, by the particular Diligence with which it is guarded, grudges him the Enjoyment thereof; watches a favourable Opportunity, and makes himself Master of it. In vain does the Gardener lament, he has No-body to blame but himself; had he seemed less solicitous about a Treasure
which

which was dear to him, perhaps, he might not have rendered others so desirous of possessing it : But, let us return from whence we have digressed.

Greatest Part of the Day was spent at the Window, in talking to each other with their Fingers ; to which Piece of Prudence (as it would have been thought by others) the Lovers give the Name of Timorousness ; the Fear of being overheard, however, by the Neighbours, kept them a little within Bounds. This Obstacle causing them some Uneasiness, and, at the same Time, heightening their Desires, a Remedy was found thereto next Day ; this was to write to each other, and convey their Letters to and fro, by the Means of a long Rod, with a Slit at the End thereof.

It is by no Means surprizing, that *Chebella*, being thus enabled to signify her Mind to her new Admirer, should fully inform him of her deplorable Condition ; nor that young *Corbini*, full of Fire, laying hold on that Opportunity, should propose to her, the admitting him to a private Interview, on Pretence of consulting together, what Measures to take, to deliver her from her intolerable Confinement. We are all very frail when we are in Love ; especially, when our Inclination prompts us to agree to the Thing requested ; and, the Heart, like a Traitor, within a besieged Fortrefs, is ready, at the first Summons, to betray it to the Enemy. Such was then the Case of poor *Chebella* ; accordingly, the only Objection she made to *Corbini's* Demand, was the Difficulty of getting to each other.

This her eager Lover easily surmounted ; he caused a Machine to be made, that went upon little Wheels, and was just as high as her Window ;

dow ; to the Top of this, by the Means of Pul-
lies and Hinges, were fastened two or three
Planks, well joined together, which would just
reach from his own Chamber, to the Closet of
Chebella ; and which might be raised up or let
down, with great Ease, like a Draw Bridge, by
the Help of a sufficient Counterpoise at one End :
This Machine, then, being wheeled between the
two Windows, and raised up by the Counterpoise
just to the Height of *Chebella*'s rested so securely at
the other End, upon the Ledges thereof, that any
one might pass over it, as a Bridge, from one
Window to the other.

This ingenious Invention being finished, the a-
morous *Corbini* acquainted his Mistress therewith,
and proposed the making Tryal thereof that very
Night. *Chebella* began then to be sensible, what a
Hazard she should run, in admitting her Lover to
visit her, in her own Apartment ; where the least
Noise might awaken her jealous Husband ; ac-
cordingly, she acquainted *Corbini* with her Fears.
Hereupon, he entered into Particulars, and en-
quired whether *Lucani* lay in her Chamber ; to
which she then, answered in the Negative ; the
Lover, quite impatient, to have a nearer Conversa-
tion with so inviting a Beauty, again pressed her
so earnestly, swearing to be so much upon his
Guard, that she should not have the least Room
for any Apprehensions, that she at last consented.
In effect, the imprudent *Chebella* was too much
in Love herself to frustrate the Hopes of so pas-
sionate an Admirer ; wherefore, she only recom-
mended it again to him, to be very discreet, and
Eleven at Night was the Hour appointed, for
making the so much wished for Experiment.

Not to keep you in Suspence, the beforemen-
tioned Machine answered their utmost Expectati-
ons :

ons; and it was then agreed, their Interviews should be constantly three Nights every Week. I shall not pretend to acquaint you, what might be Subject of the Conversation of these two venturous Lovers; it never came to my Knowledge: What I have been assured of is, that this Intercourse between them, lasted for several Months without its being interrupted by the least cross Accident; this continual Calm presaged a Storm, and, accordingly, it was not long, before it fell upon them very heavily.

What I must by no Means omit, is a Circumstance, of whose Importance you will be sensible, in its proper Place. As much in Love, as *Corbini* was, he was not unapprized of the Danger to which he exposed himself, in passing so often from his own Window to that of *Chebella*; a Plank might break or give Way; or his Foot might slip; in which Case, his Death was inevitable, to ward against this, therefore, as much as possible, being in some Measure, Master of the Street, which was neither a Thorough-Fare, nor much frequented (by Reason that so much thereof was taken up, by the Back-side of the Embassador's *Hotel*) he had a large Dunghill laid there above a Yard deep, upon divers Pretences, which no one pretended to contradict, that it might contribute to his Safety, in Case of any Misfortune.

In all Probability, the Correspondence, between these two Lovers, might have lasted much longer, had it not been for a Circumstance, owing purely to Chance; or to speak more justly, to an over-ruling Providence. Heaven, which had no Doubt, determined to punish their Offences, had so ordered it, as has been already ob-

served, that *Lucani* was the Artist, upon whom *Corbini* had pitched, to embellish the Gallery before-mentioned with Paintings. During the first Months, he was employed wholly about the Corners; but having once finished them, he went to work upon the Middle of the Ceiling; and placed himself unfortunately over against *Chebella's* Window. This Accident however, might possibly not have been attended with any ill Consequences, had it not been for the prodigious Imprudence of the two Lovers.

The Scaffolding, upon which *Lucani* sat, to paint the Ceiling, being raised higher than the Windows, from whence the Correspondence was carried on, he could never have set Eyes on them from thence; but he must have been absolutely deaf, not to have overheard the Conversation, which mutually passed between them, and that without any Manner of Caution, even at Noon-Day. In effect, *Corbini* and *Chebella*, being hurried away by their Passion, and growing more rash and venturous, by Reason of the Quiet they had 'till then enjoyed, talked together so loud, and their Discourse was animated with so much Passion and Tenderness, and spoken in a Manner so moving and affecting, that however intent the Painter was upon his Work, it diverted him from it; and he could not forbear giving Attention thereto.

The Sound of a Woman's Voice, especially his own Wife's, when a Man is susceptible of Jealousy, strikes him, and makes terrible Impressions; particularly if she utters any Thing, that may give Umbrage, and create Mistrust: Accordingly, *Lucani* nettled to the very Quick, comes down from his Scaffold. The Eyes of a Husband, let People say what they will, are but

too clear-sighted : In effect, *Lucani* spies out his Wife, and thunder-struck thereat, his Pallet, and Pencils drop out of his Hand ; he turns as pale as Death ; his Legs fail him, and he trembles from Head to Foot ; but, at the same Time, he is ready to burst with Fury.

Had it not been for the Disorder and Weakness occasioned in him, by the Surprise, he would have gone directly, to have revenged himself on her for the Outrage ; but he could not stand : His Jealousy, however, was as good to him as the most powerful Cordial, and soon restored him to his Strength and Senses. A Man who is infected with that dreadful Distemper, takes a Pleasure in seeking fresh Matter wherewith to feed his Disease ; accordingly, *Lucani* forsakes every Thing else, to listen again to the Discourse of the two Lovers ; let any one judge then, how great his Rage and Fury must be ; every Expression of his Wife's is dictated by the most lively and tender Passion ; each Word is as a Dagger which pierces him to the Heart. Besides, if these too expressive Proofs, of the most ardent Love, had been uttered through Iron Grates, by which Means he might have thought his Honour safe, he might perhaps have been comforted and pacified ; but, being spoken from a Window, that might be scaled ; to which he was quite a Stranger ; and being entirely ignorant of its belonging to his own House ; this it was that transported him to the utmost Rage ; nor could he comprehend by what Means his Wife had been able to render all his wise Precautions of no Effect.

Exasperated to the last Degree, at all these Considerations, he had a Mind, a second Time,
to

to run Home, and sacrifice *Chebella* to his just Resentment; but a sudden Thought stopt him for a Moment; his Tenderneſs for his Wife revived, and began to intercede in her Favour; ſuggeſting, that ſhe might not yet be entirely criminal; his Honour might ſtill be untouched; and Appearances were often deluſive. A Man, who is well acquainted with the World, has been very converſant therein, has read much, and been addiſted to Study, finds ſome Relief, and Comfort in Moderation; but then, it is dangerous indeed when a Huſband, endued with all theſe Qualities, is conſtrained by undeniable Proofs of Guilt, to throw off the Character here deſcribed. The Anger of ſuch a Man reſembles Lightning; it is a Fire, which gives no Warning; but ſtrikes, and burns as ſuddenly and effectually as that without its being poſſible to ward off the Blow.

Accordingly, *Lucani*, notwithſtanding the cruel Anguiſh that preyed inwardly upon his Spirits, did not return Home, 'till his uſual Hour; being reſolved, not to give his Wife any Reaſon, to harbour the leaſt Miſtruſt of him: He had his Deſign in ſo doing. After-Supper, he withdrew to his own Apartment, pretending to have the Head-Ach, and even went to Bed, where he lay ſome Time; when, by this Means, he had left no Room for Suſpicion, and conſequently, had put *Chebella* entirely off her Guard; he ſlipt out of his Houſe, with the utmoſt Caution; placed himſelf where he might lie perdue, and ſee all that paſſed; and was not long before he diſcovered but too much.

Heaven, which had determined at this Juncture, to wreak its long-delayed Vengeance, on theſe two ſecure Lovers, had ſo ordered it, that this was the Night appointed for their Meeting;
accordingly,

accordingly, the Machine was wheeled to the usual Place, at the accustomed Hour ; *Lucani*, astonished at a Phenomenon so extraordinary, could hardly believe his Eyes ; but waited with a Rage and Impatience not to be expressed, to see what would be the Consequence of this aerial Bridge. Too soon, alas ! was he Witness thereto ; too soon did the Sight of *Corbini*, entering at the fatal Window, convince him of his Misfortune.



C H A P. VIII.

The Death of Chebella. A Battle ensues thereupon, between Corbini and the Sbirri. Lufinette's extraordinary Birth. Lucani disowns her, and prosecutes Corbini with the utmost Fury. Corbini acquitted ; and Lufinette declared Lucani's Daughter. His Rage thereat, which causes his Death. Lufinette forced into a Nunnery, by her Guardian ; and why. Comes out in Spite of his Teeth, and goes to France. A monstrous Match there proposed to her.

IT would require a much greater Fluency of Expression than I am Mistress of, pursued *Lufinette*, to describe in a lively Manner the Rage wherewith *Lucani* was transported at the Sight of this fatal Proof of his Dishonour. He recollected himself, however, for some Moments, that he might the better study in what Manner to display the Fury of his Revenge. He has no Room to question but his Wife and her Gallant will fall Victims to his Resentment ; but, in order to sur-
prize

prize them the better, it is necessary he should moderate his Anger, be Master of his Steps, and restrain his Rage, 'till he can vent it securely and unavoidably on their Heads.

What puzzled him most, was, that he was quite a Stranger to the Stage where this bloody Tragedy was quickly to be acted; he had taken good Notice, however, that the Window was pretty near that belonging to the Apartment wherein he had locked up *Chebella*; but he could not by any Means imagine by what Miracle she could find the Way to get out of her Chamber, and up thither, without his perceiving it in the least.

Full of these Reflections, he returns again Home; steals up the Stairs without Noise; opens the Door of his Wife's Room, as softly as possible, and advances towards the Bed, with his Dagger uplifted in one Hand, and a dark Lanthorn in the other; but the Lovers had never carried their Imprudence so far, as to venture to have their Interviews in this Chamber. *Lucani* then, as was observed before, goes directly towards the Bed; opens the Curtains; holds up his Lanthorn; and looks every where; But can find none of the intended Victims. He then searches all over the Closet; at last, he sees the fatal Door; discovers the Back-Stairs; and endeavours to creep up without any Noise; but such Designs, with whatever Resolution a Man arms himself, are seldom carried on to Execution, without creating such an Emotion in him, as is apt to make him guilty of some Blunder.

Accordingly, *Lucani* stumbles in going up the Back-Stairs, and makes a Noise in endeavouring to save himself; and the Lovers, alarmed thereat, have Recourse to Flight for their Security;
the

the *Lanthorn Lucani* carried, to enable him to find them out, betrays him, and shews him at their Heels; *Corbini* gets first out at the Window, and holds out his Hand to assist the trembling *Chebella*; but the incensed Husband appears that very Minute; already he is at the Window, and follows his Wife out thereat; already his Arm is stretched out, and the Dagger uplifted, just going to strike; the terrified Victim strives to hurry on, to avoid the dreadful impending Stroke; but vain are all her Efforts, she only escapes one Death to meet another! Her Foot slips, and she falls into the Street.

Hereupon *Corbini*, seeing but too plainly, that all his Assistance had been unavailing to the unhappy *Chebella*, hastened into his own Apartment; with Design, however, to have his unfortunate Mistress removed, and let Blood, in case her Fall did not prove mortal.

On the other Hand, *Lucani* was quite outrageous at having, in some Measure, missed his Revenge; though it comforted him a little, that he was delivered from an unfaithful Wife, without having imbrued his Hands in her Blood: Greatly enraged, however, that he had suffered the Gallant, who had seduced her, to escape with Life, he resolves to take the securest Way, to make him fall a Sacrifice to his injured Honour.

Fully bent on this, he hurries out; goes to the * *Sbirri*, and places them in Ambush in the Street; not in the least doubting, but his Wife's Lover would cause her Body to be removed. Thus persuaded, he makes them observe a most profound

* *Sbirri*, a Sort of Guard so call'd at *Rome*, in the Nature of our Watchmen.

profound Silence, and soon after a Door opens; upon which he gives the Signal agreed on between them. By this Time the Lights that are brought illuminate the Scene, and a Woman, stretched out at her Length, without any Sign of Life, is perceived to be carried off. *Lucani* tells the † *Barigello* it is his Wife; upon which the *Sbirri* fall upon *Corbini*, who calls out for Help, and defends himself, in the mean while, with great Bravery. The Servants of the *Hotel* run to his Assistance, whereupon the Face of Affairs is soon changed; *Corbini* is disengaged from his Antagonists, and more Domesticks pouring out upon them every Minute, the *Sbirri* are obliged to betake themselves to Flight, and abandon the Corpse of the unfortunate *Chebella*, to the triumphant *Corbini*, who retires into the *Hotel*, with all the Servants, and fastens the Gates after him.

As soon as they had disappeared, the *Barigello*, the *Sbirri*, and *Lucani*, who had been obliged to quit the Field, in order to save themselves from the Fury of the Domesticks of the *Hotel*, returned to the fatal Spot, where the unhappy Accident had happened; and the *Barigello*, as in Duty bound, being willing to give the best Account he could of this melancholy Affair, and desirous not to omit any Circumstance which might tend towards an Insight into the Truth, looked about every where very carefully, with Torches, whether no Spots of Blood could be found, which might create Suspicion of an Assassination.

Whilst he was thus employed, the Cries of a new-born Infant induced him to direct his Steps towards the Place from whence they came, and the

† *Barigello*, the Officer who commands them, in the same Manner as our Constable.

the Condition, wherein it lay, rendered it very evident it had not been many Minutes in the World, but must have owed its Birth to the Fall of the unfortunate *Chebella*: An experienced Midwife who was immediately sent for, and who came along with the *Sbirri*, declared it could not possibly be otherwise. Words would but faintly express the Rage and Fury of *Lucani*, at this new and disagreeable Discovery; he shuddered with Passion, and trembled from Head to Foot; at last, when his Despair could find Utterance, he cry'd out, O the Traitress! O unparalleled Abuse! I swear by all that is most sacred, I am not the Father of that Brat: Having thus spoken, he fell down, without any Senses, at the Foot of the *Barigello*.

Could you have thought it, Sir, cry'd *Lusnette*, addressing herself to me, with her Face covered over with Blushes, and looking me stedfastly in the Face, that I, who am now accosting you, am this Child of Darkness; and that, if you will give Credit to the unjust Frenzy of *Lucani*, I am an Object of Horror, fit only to be abandoned as an Outcast. Would not he, in his Fury, induce any one to think, I was sullied with the blackest of Crimes before I was born; and was indebted, for an unfortunate Life, to my Mother's own Brother. Alas! is it not much more reasonable to be directed in our Judgment, by the Decision of a venerable Court, who, by an authentic Decree, assigned me my real Father?

Whilst the *Sbirri* removed *Lucani*, in order to bring him again to Life, the *Barigello* lifted me up, and enjoined the Midwife to see Care taken of me, until my Fate should be decided; which done, he drew up his Account of this intricate

Affair: And the very next Day, *Lucani* being come to himself, *Corbini* was summoned, indicted, and prosecuted with the utmost Severity by *Lucani*, whose inconsiderate Fury prompted him, to revenge that Way, his injured Honour; and the Death of a Wife; whose Loss, as false as he believed her, he could not think on without Tears.

Accordingly, *Corbini* was at once accused of debauching, ravishing, and an incestuous Commerce with *Cbebella*, his own Sister, and the Wife of *Lucani*; not being willing, therefore, to run the Hazard, of waiting the Issue of a Prosecution from which, as he was friendless, he could never have got off without a Miracle, he betook himself to Flight; hastened away to his Master; acquainted him with the whole Story; and implored his Protection.

This Step was of infinite Service to him; for the Embassador, whose Favourite he was, as has been already observed, exerted, so seasonably and powerfully, his Credit and Interest in his Behalf, and so fair a Turn was given to the whole Affair, that *Lucani* not only saw *Corbini* (who had surrendered himself) acquitted, but was condemned to make him Satisfaction for the Prosecution; acknowledge me for his Daughter; and reimburse him all the Cost and Charges of the Suit; which *Corbini* generously forgave him.

This Sentence is very particular, cried I, without being able to forbear interrupting *Lusnette*; what Defence could then be made, against a Charge that seems so plain, and so well supported, and proved. What cannot Truth and Innocence do, answered *Lusnette*, especially when assisted by all the Subtleties, and artful Subterfuges of the Law?

Accordingly,

Accordingly, the Answer of *Corbini* was very plain and plausible; the Purport thereof was this: That at his Return from *England*, having been informed his Sister was barbarously treated by her Husband, he had been so much concerned thereat, as well as at having been refused to see her sometimes, that he confessed he had sought an Opportunity of comforting her; that, however, upon mature Consideration, being afraid of rendring her thereby yet more unhappy than she was, he had afterwards given over that Design; but that, unfortunately for his Sister, it coming to her Ears, that her Brother lived in a House opposite to hers, she had managed Matters so, that she had found the Means to acquaint him with the inhuman Usage she met with; that, amongst several other Instances of her Husband's Cruelty, his Sister had given him to understand, that without any Manner of Reason, he daily threatened to poison her, as soon as ever he should be weary of her; that hereupon, the poor Woman, being terrified to Death, at a sullen gloomy Temper, with which he had been possessed for divers Months, during which he had kept her close confined; and being afraid her Troubles would never have any End but with her Life; had applied herself to him, her Brother, and earnestly conjured him, to contrive some Way for her Deliverance.

That being at last wearied out, and touched to the quick by the continual Tears, and these repeated and urgent Sollicitations of his wretched Sister, he was no longer able to resist the Cries of Nature, but had put his Brains to the Rack, to find out some Means to save her Life; that to this End, he had devised the Machine set forth in the Charge; that having been surprized by

her barbarous Husband, just as he was about to deliver *Cbebella* from his cruel Hands, the Fear of a Dagger, wherewith he pursued her, had been the Occasion of her unfortunate Fall and Death, as also of my Birth; that even he himself owed his Safety only to his Flight; and that he was, therefore, greatly surprized, that an Action, to which he was prompted, and even bound by the Tyes of Nature and common Humanity, should be represented in the most criminal Light: He concluded with saying, that he comforted himself, however, for this monstrous and terrible Injustice, by his Confidence in the profound Penetration of his Judges, who, he trusted, would have sufficient Discernment to distinguish between Guilt and Innocence.

This was the Colour they gave to this nice Affair; and, to add more Strength thereto, *Corbini*, being well advised, demanded to have *Lucani's* House searched; assuring the Court that the Dagger above-mentioned would be found there: In Effect, his Request was granted; and the Poi-nard, which *Lucani* had not had the Precaution to hide, was accordingly produced; which corroborating Circumstance, as little to be relied on, as it was in itself, contributed not a little to his getting the better of the Cause.

Mortified and exasperated to the last Degree, at having thus missed his Revenge, *Lucani*, who, far from expecting to see himself cast, thought to have had *Corbini* sentenced to Death, took the Judgment of the Court so much to Heart, and above all, was so intolerably enraged at being obliged to acknowledge me for his Daughter, that he died with Despair thereat.

It hapened that before his Decease, the Court had appointed me a Guardian; for Fear my Father,

ther, in Revenge, should make any Attempt upon my Life ; and unfortunately for me, the Effects, that fell to me, when *Zucani* ended his wretched Days, were so considerable, and the Possession thereof so sweet, that, as soon as ever I was marriageable, my Guardian proposed the making me his Wife. I had conceived an unaccountable Aversion to him, from my most tender Infancy ; and, accordingly, on this Occasion, I did not scruple to let him know I would not be his on any manner of Terms ; neither would I ever consent to any such unsuitable Overtures. This my Sincerity was by no Means well relished ; and, accordingly, as I had, till then, been brought up entirely ignorant of my Fate, to punish me for my ridiculous Haughtiness, as he called it, he discovered to me all the horrible Circumstances which had attended my Birth.

I shuddered thereat, and trembled, but did not alter my Resolution ; all he could say to me on this Head was to no Purpose ; neither could he daunt me, by his Threatnings to revive a Law-Suit, the Loss of which would reduce me to Beggary : I had sufficient good Sense, though very young, to be convinced within myself that this Wretch, who was actuated more by Interest, than by Love, would not suffer any one to intermeddle with my Affairs, which he looked upon, at the Bottom, as his own ; being fully determined, at all Events, to convert my Fortune to his own Use : Besides this, it would not have been easy to have brought my Legitimacy into Question, after an express Decree of a supreme Court of Judicature had been obtained in my Favour.

During a whole Month, my Guardian had Recourse to all imaginable Stratagems, to induce me to condescend to his Will ; but finding,

at last, that all his Attempts to that Purpose would be in vain, and infinitely incensed thereat, he alledged certain Reasons, devised by his Malice, that he might have a Pretence for confining me in a Convent, where he suffered me to want even Necessaries; assuring me, at the same Time, he would render me miserable for the Remainder of my Days, unless I changed my Resolution in his Favour. So far, however, was this barbarous Usage from inducing me to comply with his Desire, that it exasperated me, and increased my Aversion to him to that Degree, that I determined within myself, rather to die of Want and Grief, than to consent to be joined in Wedlock to my cruel Persecutor and Tormenter.

In the mean While, I spent my Days and Nights in Tears continually; and every one pitied my hard Fortune: Amongst the Rest, the *French* Ambassador's Lady, whom Heaven, no Doubt, inclined to retire for a While into that Convent, in order to alleviate my Sorrows, declared herself in my Favour; and proposed to me, to carry me with her to *Paris*, when she set out for that City, as she was about to do very soon. This Offer, which if it took Effect, would shelter me from the Persecution of my villainous Guardian, transported me so much, that I threw myself at the Feet of the Ambassador, to testify my sincere Acknowledgment to her; acquainting her however with my just Fears, that my Tormentor would maliciously oppose her good Intentions, in my Behalf, on Pretence of the Reasons before-mentioned; of which I informed her.

Hereupon, my generous Benefactress promised to make my Case her own, and to remove this Difficulty; accordingly, in effect one Word of
her

her Mouth made all Things easy ; my Tyrant durst not draw upon himself a Person of such great Power and Interest. He chose, therefore, rather to do Things seemingly with a good Will ; and gave me whatever was requisite, to enable me to appear suitably to the Station of one of her Women, in which Quality the Embassadress was pleased to receive me ; he hoped, no Doubt, it would be the last Money he should disburse for me ; and that, what by my being removed so far from him, what by some unforeseen Accidents which might happen, he should remain peaceable Possessor of my Substance as indeed he is to this Day.

I thought, however, I had recovered new Life, as soon as my Condition was changed ; and indeed, the Favours with which my kind Protectress loaded me, when I was come with her to *Paris*, gave me Reason to think I should then be the happiest Creature in the World ; but ought I to have reckoned upon any such Thing, after the inauspicious Omens that had attended my Birth ? A sudden Illness carried off my generous Benefactress ; and all my Comfort, under this cutting Misfortune, was, that having been recommended by her, before her Decease, to the Dutches's *De* —, her Relation, her Grace was pleased to receive me in the same Quality, and treat me with the same Goodness.

About a Year had I been with her Grace, and had studied, with the utmost Care, and Diligence, to do every Thing that might be agreeable to her, when one Day, sending for me into her Closet, *Lusnette*, said she, you are young, and have neither Father nor Mother, nor Friend ; I may chance to die, and I should then reproach myself for not having provided against the Misfortune

to

to which you would be exposed, in being left at your own Disposol too soon; my Design, therefore, is to prevent this, by helping you to a Husband.——

Ah! Madam, cried I, interrupting her Grace, and frightened to Death at this Proposal, (imagining my Guardian had caused Application to be made to her for this Purpose) do not be in a Hurry to render me unhappy; I prefer the Honour of belonging to you, to all the Husbands in the Universe. It is very well, resumed the Dutches, smiling; and seeming highly pleased with the Attachment I expressed to her Person: but one must have some Settlement in this World; the State of a Maid, and especially an old Maid, is very disagreeable; our youthful Days pass away like a Shadow, a Flower without a Prop, cannot long sustain itself, but decays visibly: You are not rich, and possibly may never recover what is your Right, out of the Hands of your self-interested Guardian; and, when one is arrived at a certain Age, and begins to want Necessaries, one regrets, though too late, the not having done like others; I have some Experience in the World, and have every Day Opportunities of seeing these Truths verified.

But you say you are unwilling to leave me; if that is the only Reason of your being averse to Marriage, it will be easy to find a Remedy for it; well, Child, pursued the Dutches, with a gracious Smile, you shall continue still with me, the one need not prevent the other; the Husband I design you belongs to me; in short, it is *Carelly* the Comptroller of my Houthold; who is a thorough honest Man, though in a very ticklish Place. He has taken a Fancy to you; but durst not declare his Sentiments, 'till he knew whether they
would

would not be disagreeable to me; and I am so well pleased with this Proof of his Regard, which shews his Attachment to my Service, that I espouse his Cause heartily; besides, he desires no other Advantage than——.

But you are in Tears, *Lusnette*, continued her Grace, speaking to me very kindly; go, you are a Fool; you don't know your own Happiness; any other but yourself would be transported with Joy: Tell me, what is it you don't like in the Match I propose to you? Is it because your Lover is advanced in Years? Nonsense! Infatuation! Ridiculous Prepossession! Most young Wenches, indeed, are very silly upon this Head; and yet Experience shews them every Day, that neither Beauty nor Youth render a Marriage State happy.

In effect, an old Husband is a complaisant Husband; whilst a young Man loves nothing but himself and his Pleasure; and, being a Prey to all his Passions, hates every Thing that opposes him in his Desire of satisfying them. But, however that be, concluded her Grace, with an absolute Tone of Voice, I am come to a Resolution, as to what relates to you; I think what I propose is for your Good; do you reflect upon it, and come to a Determination; but, remember this, I insist either on being obeyed, or your never presuming to appear more in my Sight.

This Order was so peremptory, that I had not Courage enough to refuse submitting to it; accordingly, I promised to comply therewith; and this Tractableness made her Grace reassume the gracious Air, which my seeming averse to her Proposal had induced her to lay aside. In effect, it was not any Dislike to the Comptroller of the Household, that had caused me to appear unwilling

ling to accept of her Grace's Offer; on the contrary, I had found in myself a secret Inclination for him, before this Marriage was so much as thought on; I had been pretty frequently in his Company; his Countenance had pleased me the very first Time I ever set Eyes on him; and I always looked upon him with Delight.

To return from whence I have digressed, no sooner had the Dutchess informed *Carely* that I had consented to give him my Hand, than he flew to me with the utmost Eagerness, and testified his Joy and Satisfaction by the most lively Transports. He had no Reason to complain of the Reception he met with from me; and, in short, the Consequence thereof was, that it was resolved, we should be married immediately after her Grace's Return from Court, where she was obliged to continue in waiting for a Month, she being determined to honour our Nuptials with her Presence

During this Delay, *Carely* hardly ever stirred from me, but was always endeavouring to prevent even my Wishes, by the most obliging Services; in short, I had accustomed myself so much to his Company, and had conceived so real an Affection for him, that I longed with an equal Impatience, to see the Day of our intended Wedding arrive. He used often to give me the tender Name of Child, and I frequently called him Papa; and, indeed, we each of us took a secret Pleasure in inuring ourselves to these endearing Expressions.

Among the Numbers that resorted to our *Hotel*, for their Conveniency or Interest, was a Woman who supplied the Ladies with the little Necessaries belonging to their Toilets; This Woman, as soon as I was recommended to the Dutchess, studiously
courted

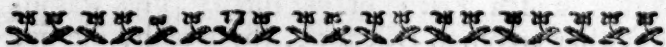
courted my Friendship, and endeavoured to oblige me on all Occasions, with so much seeming Goodness, that I could not help taking a Liking to her. There was scarce a Week, wherein she did not make me some little Pretents; sometimes it would be a Tippet, which she would pretend she had got into the Bargain, in buying a Parcel of Goods; and, at other Times, some other such Trifle; and she would always have some Reason ready to prevent my refusing them. Kindness is apt to draw our Affections; and Presents are enticing; they are apt to cast a Mist before our Eyes; in effect, those Days, when Mrs. *Flairant* was expected, were as welcome to me, as if I had been to make one upon a Party of Pleasure.

This Woman, then, such as I have represented her, was not the last to compliment me upon my intended Nuptials; she told me upon this Head, laughing, your Husband might very well be your Father; and an old Fellow is a sad Piece of Furniture for a young Body; but Riches are of some Value, and a Friend of yet more: This was always her common Discourse, by which I did not apprehend any Thing, taking it only for the Effect of her natural Gaiety; for she used to make all her Grace's Women laugh; and never was with any of us, but she diverted us with some merry Story. She would also tell me, that as soon as I was settled, she would be my Chambermaid, and that I should doat upon her, when I once knew her Worth; hereupon I assured her, that I was very sensibly touched by all these Proofs of her Friendship; and in effect, I was so sincere, that I told her if that should happen, it would compleat my Joy.

In short, I spent my Days perfectly easy, beloved and caressed by every One, when the Loss
of

of her Grace's Diamond Ear-rings, too unadvisedly lent, disturbed all my Happiness; which first Misfortune was but the Fore-runner of all those that were to follow; for which, however, I am not much concerned, since they have been the Means of procuring me a real Friend, which is an inestimable Treasure, for which one cannot pay too dear.

I made no other Answer to this well turned Compliment, but by a low Bow, for Fear of interrupting *Lusnette*; she was just coming to some Passages, which had given me too much Uneasiness, for me to delay satisfying my Curiosity upon that Head. It was the Particulars, which were to follow, that were to determine what Opinion I was to retain of *Lusnette*; I knew too much already to be afraid of her imposing on me; and, provided she did not, and I found no Cause to suspect her having made a false Step, I thought I should have no Reason to repent what I had done for so charming a Creature.



C H A P. IX.

Lusnette's Trouble. Her Story interrupted, and bow. She is greatly terrified, and not without just Cause.

AFTER having complimented me, as has been observed before, finding I made her no other Answer than by a Bow, the lovely *Lusnette* went on as follows.

You know, Sir, with what uncommon Generosity you contrived to comfort me, by substituting

ting another Pair, of equal Value, made after the same Fashion, and by the same Hand, in the Room of the lost Ear-rings; nevertheless, though they were so exactly matched, the Dutchess at her Return Home perceived a Difference between these and those that were lost. Hereupon, she ordered me to be called, and asked me, as having had them in my Keeping, what was the Meaning thereof. I blushed, and would have excused myself by a Lie; but can one persist therein before a Mistress, and a Mistress of such a Rank, who eyes one as if she would look one through?

Accordingly, she took Notice of my Confusion, and insisted absolutely on my telling her the Truth; insomuch, that not being able to devise any plausible Excuse, and finding her determined to dive to the Bottom of it, I was obliged to confess to her ingenuously all that had happened. Her Grace immediately asked who you was, where you lodged, and what you was; I answered sincerely, that all I knew of you was, that I had met you at the Embassador's; that you was in an Abbot's Habit, and that you was not unknown to his Excellency; whereupon she shook her Head, and told me, that, till then, she had never believed me capable of indirect Practices; but that she did not love to have any People about her who were so ready at Expedients: This said, she turned her Back upon me, and went into her Closet.

Had Sentence of Death been passed upon me, I could not have been more thunderstruck, than at what had passed; I found there was no staying for me with her Grace; I ran, therefore, like a mad Creature to my Chamber, where I burst into a Flood of Tears, and gave myself up

to Despair. *Carely*, being soon informed of my Anguish, hastened to my Relief, was greatly concerned at my Condition, and begged to know the Occasion of it; wherein I satisfied him. My sincere and artless Story gained Belief with him; and being more compassionate than the Dutcheſs, he assured, me that, to shew me it had made no ill Impression upon him, he would go directly and have our Marriage-Articles drawn; and that if her Grace was not to be brought off from her Prejudice against me, after his having acquainted her with the whole Truth, he would desire her to dismiss him likewise, sooner than he would break his Promise to me.

This Assurance flattered me agreeably, and greatly dispelled my Sorrow. I was nettled that the Dutcheſs had been capable of conceiving an ill Opinion of me, and I longed for the Happiness of seeing myself in a Condition to be able to do without her, in case she should not give Credit to what had been told her on this head. What I now say, Sir, cry'd *Lusnette*, breaking off, and addressing herself to me, may seem a little vain, but I have promised not to conceal any Thing from you, and will not falsify my Word.

She was in this Part of her Story, and I was waiting with the utmost Impatience, till she should come to the Recital of what pass'd at the Interview with the old Marquis: I longed no less to know how she had managed to preserve her Innocence at *La Flairant's*; not being able to reconcile the Thought of her having done so, with the Authority which that cursed Bedlame had assumed over my charming Maiden; I languished, I say, with Impatience, to be satisfied as to all these Particulars, when we were interrupted by the Landlady's coming into the Room, and inform-
in

ing us, that a Woman, who had just alighted out of a Hackney-Coach with two Men, demanded to speak with the young Gentlewoman who had been brought thither that Day; and that *Lusnette* being the only Person, with whom this Description agreed, it must necessarily be her they wanted.

Hereupon, *Lusnette*, shuddering with Fear, asked what Manner of Woman she was who enquired after her; in which having been satisfied, and finding, by the Account, it was *La Flairant* herself, she ran into my Arms, and told me she was ruined and undone, to all Intents and Purposes, if I forsook her. I had sent away the Landlady before, and ordered her to desire them to wait a Moment; wherefore, being alone with her, fear nothing, said I, you are in a Place of Safety; let it be *La Flairant*, or who it will, if they should offer to proceed to Violence, I have a sure Way to keep them within Bounds; you may have perceived, since my having the Honour to be known to you, that I am not at a Loss to come to a Resolution, in Case of Extremities; and besides this, the Ambassador is not my Enemy; there is no doubt, therefore, of his Excellency's protecting you, on my Recommendation, should there be any Need thereof.

Having thus premised to *Lusnette*, who seemed a little composed thereat, I examined whether my Pistols (which I had used to carry about me, ever since my being employed by the Ambassador on such Occasions as I then was) were in a good Condition; and, finding all was right, went out of the Room, promising my lovely Mistress to return in a few Minutes. I begg'd Leave of her, at the same Time, to lock her in her Chamber, and put the Key into my Pocket; which done,

I went to the Room, where they were waiting for me, fully determined to make the Bullies know, in case they should pretend to hector and threaten, that I did not fear them; but was, at least, as much a Kill-Cow, and as fond of Mischief as the worst of them.

The End of the THIRD PART.





THE
BUSY-BODY:
OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF
Mons. *BIGAND*.

PART IV.

CHAP. I.

*Who were the Persons who asked for Lufinette.
Bigand's Bravery and Resolution.*



It is no inconsiderable Advantage when a Man is bless'd with a good Presence; it prepossesses others in Favour of the Owner; commands Respect when it is necessary, and is beneficial on all Occasions. On the contrary, a mean Aspect sets a Man upon a Level with the Multitude, and buries him in the Crowd (of whatever Rank he is) provided he is not known; consequently it makes him little regarded, nay, frequently despised. I

confess, it is evidently unjust to suffer ourselves to be led away by such accidental Accomplishments; no Man is his own Maker, and it is a sufficient Mortification to have such an unpromising Look, without being obliged also to undergo Affronts and Injuries on that Account.

It was not long before I had sufficient Experience of the Truth of what has been here advanced; when I went to speak with the People, of whom the Landlady had given us Notice, had I been tall and well made; had I been in good Case; had my Face been full, and my Complexion ruddy; had my Peruke hung in large Curls, and all my Appearance been suitable to that of an Abbot of Distinction, I should have been accosted with Respect; but, as has been observed before, though my Linen and my Garb, in short, all but my Person was answerable to that Character, the slightly Air and Mien which prepossesses People in one's Favour, and keeps them in Awe, was wanting.

To return from whence I have digressed. *Lusnette's* Conjecture proved but too well founded; the Gentry who had asked for her, were *La Flairant*, accompanied by two Fellows, whose Hats fiercely cocked, and pulled down over their Eyes, sufficiently shewed them to be Miscreants. The Moment I appeared, the profligate old Bedlame, looking at me with an insolent Air, and setting both her Arms a Kembow, demanded of me, haughtily, by what Authority I had robbed her of her Daughter; and whether I had the Impudence to pretend to hinder her from having her again.

It is in vain, continued she, to offer to deny her being in the House; you are mightily mistaken if you think you have a Fool to deal with; I
sent

sent People after the Coach, who never lost Sight of it, from the Place where I was obliged to give over the Pursuit, 'till it arrived here: in short, I insist upon her being restored to me this Moment; she was not made for you; otherwise I shall be able to force you to it by such Means as you won't like. I must tell you yet farther, added she, if you think to escape from me, by reviling or slandering me, you may be assured I won't spare you; I know your true Character, and shall be able to make you own yourself for what you are; remember the hundred *Louis d'Ors*.

Being tired with the Tedioufness of her Discourse, and the Heat with which it was spoken; I told her calmly, without being in the least daunted, that I begged her to begin with lowering her Voice, or otherwise I should immediately withdraw, and leave her to herself. — Oh! we shall see that, we shall see that, cried she, interrupting me, and getting between me and the Door, we shall see that presently; are not you an admirable Fellow, to pretend to take upon you before me? Is not there a pretty Phiz now, to think to keep one in Awe? Know, my little Terrier — Ah! Woman, said I, pushing her away, to open the Door, no ill Names, I beseech you; you would do much better to begone; if you stay here much longer you will repent it; I have nothing farther to say to you.

These Words were hardly out of my Mouth, when one of the Fellows before-mentioned advanced, and laid hold on my Hand; for I was endeavouring all the while to force open the Door: Be so good, dear Sir, said he, in a jeering Tone, not to deprive us so soon of your agreeable Presence; or, at least, suffer us to accompany you where you are going. During this Speech, the Comrade

rade of this fine Would-be-Wit was sneering in an Elbow-Chair, wherein he stretched himself out at his full Length, and rolling a Pair of staring Goggle-Eyes, with which he viewed me from Head to Foot: He seemed indeed, by his Motions with a large Cane, wherewith he played, to give me to understand he only waited for the Word to break it about my Bones.

In effect, the Posture into which I put myself, when the first of these Russians pushed back the Door (which I had wrenched open in Spite of the old Bedlame) having undoubtedly displeased the second, he rose up; came towards me, and looking at me with a threatening Eye; I think thee very bold, thou Shrimp of an Abbot, said he, to dare to talk to my Sister with thy Hat upon thy Head, and to chatter before us: Sdeath! continued he, pulling it off, and throwing it upon the Floor, I don't know what hinders me from tossing thee out of the Window; and if thou dost not shew me directly where the Girl thou art asked for is, and dost not deliver her up to me, I will cut thee to Atoms.

The Threat was alarming; and the Tone of Voice wherein it was uttered terrifying; but yet it did not daunt me; when first this Cut-Throat approached me, I was upon my Guard; I have already observed, unless I am much mistaken, that I was naturally courageous; provided I had wherewith to defend myself, I feared nothing; the Business about which I was employed, authorized me to carry Pocket-Pistols; and when a Man is really brave, and so armed, he is strong indeed; especially when he has to do with Fellows, whose mean Spirits and rascally Practices, render them both contemptible, and obnoxious to Punishment.

Accordingly,

Accordingly, drawing out one of my Pistols ready cocked, and presenting the Muzzle of it to this formidable Hector; be gone this Instant, said I; a little Matter would make me shoot you through the Head; and if I don't punish thy Insolence upon the Spot, it is only because I have proper Ways of dealing with such Rascals as you; a Magistrate, before whom you shall soon be carried, shall take that Trouble upon himself, as well as that of doing Justice to your worthy Sister, whom I know, and to whom I will give her due Character. As for the rest, to let you see that I don't act without a proper Warrant, you shall first be conducted to the ———— Ambassador's, to whom I belong; his Excellency will satisfy you, as to all that relates to me.

Having thus said, I pretended to be determined upon going, but held my Pistols all the while ready to fire; however, there was no longer Need of all this Precaution; my resolute Behaviour, the Sight of the Pistols, and the Name of Mons. D——, produced a most extraordinary Change; The old Bedlame fell at my Feet; the Bullies pulled off their Hats; and their Threatenings were turned to Supplications: In short, Abundance of Excuses were made me for the Insolence of their Behaviour; they did not know me; my Pardon was asked, and Leave to be gone, which was readily granted, on Pretence of Charity; though, at the Bottom, I was not a little overjoyed, that I had extricated myself so well from this ugly Business, and heartily glad the whole had passed off without Noise.

As soon as I was thus rid of these Gentry, I had the Curiosity to follow them down to the Street-Door, and see how they would dispose of themselves; they had just got again into the Hackney-

Hackney-Coach ; and the Orders they gave the Driver, must have been very strict without Doubt, for he made off with the utmost Speed. I went again up Stairs, then thanking Heaven, I had come off so fortunately ; and hastened to the Chamber of my dear *Lusnette* ; who was in perfect Raptures, when I had acquainted her with the Particulars of what had happened.



CHAP. II.

The Sequel of Lusnette's Story. She is about to be preposterously married, but is surprizingly prevented, by a shocking Discovery. The Consequences thereof. La Flairant's wicked Designs upon her.

WHILST that charming Creature and I were discoursing together, about the Impudence of *La Flairant*, and her Accomplices, Supper, which I had ordered betimes, on Account of the Visit I was to pay to *Rametzi*, was brought up. We sat down to Table, therefore, and ate each of us very heartily. Never, before had I made such a delightful Meal ; *Lusnette*, being delivered from the uneasy Apprehensions, which had, till then, tormented her, shew'd herself in her ordinary Temper. She was naturally gay ; and this Disposition, which then appeared in its full Latitude, became her wonderfully ; I discovered a thousand Beauties in her, which had before escaped me ; in effect, she was really enchanting ; and I was captivated in good earnest.

Mean while, the Pleasure I took, in gazing at her, had so entirely ingrossed my Thoughts, that

that I quite forgot to desire the Sequel of her Story; however, some Reflections upon that Head, having made me uneasy, and her long Visit to the Marquis, with her Stay at *La Flairant's*, coming into my Head, on a sudden, and reviving my Jealousy, I became melancholy and pensive. *Lusnette* took Notice of this Change of Temper, and asked me obligingly, whence it proceeded; I excused it, in the handsomest Manner that was possible, and ascribed it to the Impressions, one could not help being sensible of, on seeing her: She rallied me upon this Gallantry; and being desirous, undoubtedly, of changing the Subject, resumed the Sequel of her Story, of her own Accord, as follows.

The engaging Manner, in which the Comptroller of the Household behaved to me, touched me to the Bottom of my Heart; and made me wait impatiently for the Effects of his Promise: He did not lose one Moment, before he performed it; but, going directly to the Dutches, managed Matters so well, that he found it no great Difficulty, to bring her off from her unjust Prejudice against me. Accordingly, he returned to me again very soon; advised me not to grieve at what was past, and assured me, before a Week was expired, he would secure me from all such Troubles.

Next Morning, being the Time agreed upon for signing the Marriage Contract, *Carelly* and I went to the Apartment of the Dutches; who had resolved to honour this Ceremony by witnessing it. By a strange Providence, when the Articles were presented to her for her signing, she desired to have them read to her; having a Mind, as she said, to hear what Advantages had been stipulated for me therein. Upon the Lawyer's
doing

doing as he was ordered, and my hearing another Name (with which I was too well acquainted, to avoid its creating an Emotion in me) subjoined to that, by which alone my intended Spouse, had 'till then been known to me, I asked with an Air of Astonishment and Confusion, what was the Meaning of this Addition ; and what Reason there was for inserting unnecessary Names.

How unnecessary ! cried the Lawyer, a little nettled ; I have not done any Thing, Madam, without Order ; neither have I put any Name in the Articles, but what was given me down in Writing. I believe it, answered I, with Perplexity enough, and without daring to pronounce that second Name, which had but too much struck my Ears ; but yet, methought I heard you mention one, which does not belong to *Monf. Carelly* : Pardon me, *Mademoiselle*, said the Comptroller of the Household, I ordered the Gentleman to write it, that nothing might be wanting to render the Articles valid : Some Reasons to which my Lady Dutchess is no Stranger, pursued he, turning to her Grace, had obliged me to assume that of *Carelly* ; but my real Name is *Corbini* ; and *Carelly* is only the Name of a small Estate, some few Miles from *Rome*. An Instrument of so much Importance, as Marriage-Articles not admitting of any Subterfuge, I was desirous (whatever Reason I may have to be apprehensive of secret Enemies) that every Thing should be done according to Law.

Is your Name then really *Corbini*, cried I, interrupting him, with yet more Confusion than ever ; and are you of *Rome*, and the Son of a Carver ? Yes, *Mademoiselle*, answered the Comptroller of the Household, surprized at the Tone wherein I spoke, and the Alteration that was visible

sible in my Countenance : May I ask you, in my Turn, whence proceed these Questions, and the Confusion you are in ; as also, by what Means you chance to know me so well ?

will inform you another Time, replied I ; the Place is not convenient ; but you may send away the Lawyer ; he can be of no Service here ; the Marriage is broken off : Having brought out this, not without much ado, the Surprise occasioned such a violent Oppression of Spirit, that all my Senses were taken away, on a sudden, and I fell down in a Swoon.

It may be easier imagined than expressed, how greatly this Discourse, and what followed thereupon, astonished the Dutches and *Carelly* : This made them wait with the utmost Impatience 'till the Care they took to bring me to myself, should enable me to explain a Mystery, which appeared to them so amazing. In the mean while, the Lawyer was sent away ; *Carelly* rightly judging, by the reserved Manner wherein I had spoken, that it would be improper to have any Witnesses, to what I had to say.

Being at last, recovered from my Swoon, though not without some Difficulty, and sufficiently restored to my Strength and Senses, to be able to speak, both her Grace, and *Carelly*, begged me earnestly, to acquaint them with the Reasons of my fainting away, and expressing so much Surprise and Confusion, at the Knowledge of the Comptroller of the Household's true Name: Alas ! answered I, a Flood of Tears streaming down my Cheeks ; can the Daughter of the Painter *Lucani*, be married to her Mother's own Brother ?

Merciful Heavens ! what do I hear ? cried *Carelly*, interrupting me, and starting back a Step

or two. You, my own Sister's Daughter! You, my own Niece! You——! What a terrible Discovery is here? In the Name of Wonder, which Way can this be!

It is but too true, resumed I; the same Reasons perhaps which obliged you to change your Name, caused me to assume that which I now bear; it was given me by the Embassador's Lady, with whom I came from *Rome*; and who brought me hither, to deliver me from the tyrannical Usage of Signor *Fbiot-Celly*, my inhuman and self-interested Guardian. Not being so well acquainted with the Nature of such Affairs, I did not imagine, the Discovery of one's real Name, had been of such Importance, as has been represented. All gracious Providence! in what a Condition had we been, had the same Ignorance occasioned such a shocking and monstrous Match!

Heaven, jealous of such a horrid Violation of its Laws, cried *Corbini*, transported with Despair, would not suffer it; why did it not also prevent the Beginning of the most violent of Passions; or, why does it not put an End thereto, now it has made me sensible of its prodigious Enormity! Having thus said, the Comptroller of the Household ran out of the Room, with the utmost Anguish and Despair visibly painted in his Face; and I was informed, within two Days afterwards, by a Letter under his own Hand, wherein he took a most moving and melancholy Farewel of me, that he had bid Adieu to the World, and shut himself up in a Monastery.

In the mean while, the Dutches, who had been infinitely surprized at his abrupt Departure; yet more so, at his absenting himself from Home for two Nights; and most of all, at the Contents
of

of his heart-breaking Letter ; insisted, upon having the Cause of these Incidents, which seemed to her so extraordinary and unaccountable, explained to her. She could not comprehend, why my only being his Niece, should induce him to such a rash and precipitate Resolution ; especially as a Stop had been put to our Marriage, and it had not proceeded to Consummation.

She insisted, therefore, as has been observed, upon my satisfying her ; and as I was forced to obey ; I endeavoured, as much as possible, to cast a Veil over some of the most alarming Passages ; but it was in vain, she was too clear sighted ; accordingly she pressed hard upon me, and extorted from me the fatal Story, I have been relating to you, since our Arrival here.

The Inferences, her Grace drew from the several Passages contained therein, as much softened as they were, by my representing them in the most favourable Light, made her shudder with Horror ; she pretended however, to pity me ; but she had secretly come to a determinate Resolution within herself : Accordingly she caused me to be told, within two Hours afterwards, in my own Chamber, to which I had retired, and where I was giving myself up to Anguish and Despair (as being but too justly apprehensive of the ill Consequences of this Discovery) that she would allow me, but four and twenty Hours, to withdraw into a Nunnery ; where she would pay my Board and Portion, out of Charity, on Condition I would take the Veil : Adding, that this was the only Way, to remove those ill Impressions, which the substituting another Pair of Ear-Rings, instead of those I had lost, had made upon her Mind ; she being still afraid, I had obtained, by some unwarrantable Means, that Assistance,

which my Fear had induced me so imprudently to accept.

This Warning, with the sharp Remonstrance that followed it, gave the finishing Stroke to my Despair; and I was abandoning myself thereto without Restraint, when in the Height of all my Agonies, *La Flairant* (who was the Woman before-mentioned, that supplied the Ladies with the little Affairs belonging to their Toilets) entered my Room on a sudden! Bless me! cried she, what avails it to indulge your Grief in this Manner! Would it not be much better, to study how to find some Remedy for your Sorrows? I am but too sensible, what just Reason you have for them, you see I am out of my Wits thereat; I am but just come from her Grace, who has done me the Honour to tell me all that has passed; she is heartily vexed, she says, that she has kept you one Minute; and will not hear a Word spoken in your Favour, but on the Conditions, which have been declared to you.

In vain did I endeavour to intercede for you; by representing, that the being immured in a Nunnery, by Compulsion, is a downright Hell; and that you have protested to me, divers Times, you had an invincible Aversion to a Cloister; she is not to be moved: And what contributes, not a little, to her being in such an ill Humour, is all the idle Tales that have been told her of you. The being in Favour creates one many Enemies; your Fellow-Servants see you are in Disgrace; and every one endeavours to make her own Court at your Expence.

La Flairant added several other Arguments, of the same Nature; and all of them tended to persuade me I was undone, if I once entered a Convent; where, she assured me, I should be treated
very

very severely, in Compliance with the Desire of the Dutcheſs, whoſe miſtaken Zeal for Religion made her think it a good Action, to put it out of my Power to gratify that Inclination ſhe imagined me to have for the World; wherein, as ſhe ſaid, I ſhould be inſallibly ruined.

It ſeemed as if this Woman took a Pleaſure, in repreſenting my Condition as deplorable as poſſible; in effect, ſhe had her Reaſons for ſo doing; ſhe was overjoy'd at having an Opportunity of reducing me to the Neceſſity of throwing myſelf into her Hands; by leaving me no Room to doubt, but after what had already happened, and my reſuſing to go into a Nunnery, the Dutcheſs would puſh Things to ſuch an Extremity, as to have me confined, in Spite of my Teeth.

What can I do then, cry'd, I, ſhedding a Flood of Tears; and terrified to the laſt Degree, at the Miſeries, the old Bedlame ſet before my Eyes? I can ſee no other End to my Miſfortunes, but that of my Life? Softly, Child, ſaid *La Flairant*, affecting a compoſed Tone of Voice, Death is a Remedy, whereof we can never fail; but have a little Patience: Is not this the very Time wherein I can be moſt ſerviceable to you? And do I ever profeſs a Friendſhip for any one in vain? Have not I given you ſufficient Proofs of my Regard for you, ſince your being in this *Hotel*?

Come, be of good Chear, I look upon you as my Daughter; nay, I will really take you as ſuch; Courage then, and dry up your Tears; I am not rich indeed, I own it, but very far from it; but if you will be induſtrious and tractable, I will promiſe you a quiet and eaſy Life; I will be your Conſidante, your Mamma, your every Thing; and we ſhall live together like little Angels. What ſay you now, continued the proſti-

gate old Hag, inveigling me by the most tender Carasses, will not this be much preferable to a Nunnery? One thing more I will promise you, pursued she, you shall have nothing to fear; I will give you such Instructions, you shall soon bless the Hour wherein you first became acquainted with me.

I must confess ingenuously, said *Lusnette*, the desperate Condition I was in, made me think this Proposal very advantageous; accordingly, I expressed myself to her in such Terms, as sufficiently testified my Acknowledgment; my Heart overflowing with Gratitude, I called *La Flairant* by the tender Name of Mother, and promised to shew her for the future, all the Regard of a Daughter who would leave Nothing undone, that might render her deserving of such Goodness.

The old Bedlame seemed transported at the Readiness with which I yielded to her Desires; very well, said she, giving me her Hand and Cheek to kiss, embrace me; on this Condition I adopt you forthwith for my Daughter; and as a Token that I look on you as such, I will give you a convincing Proof thereof this very Night. One of my Friends, who is a Man of Quality, and rich, has desired me to help him to a young Woman of Family, to keep him Company; I do not mean in a criminal Manner; he is a Man in Years, and one from whom you may derive considerable Advantages: All you have to do, is to hit his Humour; but be easy upon that Head, I will give you your Lesson, after which all will go to a Miracle. I will carry you thither directly, as soon as you are dressed, for Fear he should either change his Mind, or another should get the Start of us; for this Place is eagerly sought after, because he is known to be both rich and generous;
such

such a Station is a perfect Paradise: You shall see, my Girl, pursued the abominable old Hypocrite, whether I am a Judge in such Matters; and whether any one for whom I concern myself has Reason to repent her Confidence and Docility.

Whilst *Lusnette* was relating these Particulars, I could not help being overjoyed at the Sincerity with which she disclosed all; I felt a secret Satisfaction thereat; and her Openess, which preposessed me in her Favour, by Reason of its Conformity with what I had myself heard, removed those Suspicions against her, which had insinuated themselves, in Spite of my Teeth, into my Mind. I conjectured from this her Sincerity, in Things to which I was no Stranger, though unknown to her, that I might depend upon her Account of those Passages, to which she was just entering.

It was not without considerable Reluctance, I resolved upon making this Visit, continued the charming *Lusnette*, with an Air that proved the Truth of what she asserted; I even started some Objections which I think it needless to repeat; but I had engaged myself too far to draw back, and not to yield implicitly to that Superiority I had voluntarily, though imprudently, suffered her to assume over me.

I accompanied her, then, to the *Hotel* of the old Marquis, for such he was; and it was no difficult Matter for me to perceive, by her familiar Behaviour there, that it was not the first Time of her having had Admittance thereat. She went into the Apartment of the Nobleman, without sending in any Word previously; he appeared to be about 'Threescore; and one might see, by his Look, he was a Person of Distinction. He was stretched out upon a Couch, and seemed not
to

to stir without great Difficulty ; but, to make Amends, though his Body was unable to move, his Tongue and his Eyes sufficiently shewed that his Mind did not partake of its Infirmities.

To return from whence I have digressed. The Marquis, with much ado, turned his Head towards me, and eyed me attentively for some Time, after which, he said to the old Bedlame, is this the young Creature whom you have so long cried up to me ? It must be confessed you don't want Address, but know perfectly well how to heighten one's Impatience : Come hither, little Beauty, continued he, holding out his Hand to me (for, indeed, the Step I had taken, which was quite new to me, had rendered me very fearful) let me see thy pretty Face ; to speak the Truth she is handsome ; but, come forward a little——there——nearer still——What a deal of Ceremony is here ?

Upon his saying thus, *La Flairant*, who undoubtedly knew the old Nobleman better than I, and was afraid the little Complaisance I shewed him would put him out of Patience, pushed me towards him. Indeed, I must own this Prelude had frightened me ; and I begun to have but an ill Opinion of the Honesty of the old Sorcerers ; this however, was nothing to what followed.

In short, as the Weakness of the old Marquis, dispelled my Fears in some Measure, I suffered myself to be led towards him with somewhat less Reluctance than I should have had otherwise, and permitted him pretty patiently to eye me for some Time through an Ogling-Glass, which he never let go out of his Hands.

Having thus surveyed me from Head to Foot, for some Minutes, by my Holy-Dame, cried he, thou hast not deceived me ; this little Gipsy is a
Treasure ;

Treasure; she is pretty and genteel, and does not seem flatteringly; Heaven send the Wit of this Moppet be answerable to her Beauty; for still there must be a little; thou knowest such a sedentary Life as I am forced to lead requires the Assistance of a sprightly and conversible Companion, to help one to pass away the tedious Hours.

Oh! you will be perfectly well satisfied upon that Head, answered the old Hag, after having made me sit down; *Mademoiselle* has been admirably well-bred, and is come of a Family — Ah! I believe thee, cried the old Marquis, interrupting her, and sputtering; for he uttered not a Syllable which was not moistened abundantly with Spittle; thou dost only thy Duty in extolling thy pretty Sparkler. I do not pretend to dispute with thee in the least upon this Head; but away with Formality, and let me speak.

Well, little Charmer, pursued the Marquis, viewing me attentively with Eyes which, as dead as they were, seemed to insinuate I know not what? Do you think we shall be able to live together? Do not my Years frighten you? They who are of your Age can seldom away with them: Nevertheless, if one might be permitted to speak well of one's self, I could say that, notwithstanding my being old, I have some good Qualities. I am of a gay Temper, and never have any odd Humours; I love Pleasure, or at least I love to hear thereof; but the greatest Perfection of all, to a young Body, is, that I am no Ways inclining to Jealousy, and do not lay any Constraint at all upon those who live with me; on the contrary, I allow them all Manner of Liberty, provided they are sincere, and acquaint me without Reserve with all their little Secrets. But, hey-day! continued the old Nobleman, with an Air of Astonishment;

nishment; thou sayest not a Word? art thou frightened at me: Thou hast not yet unclosed thy Teeth; are they set in thy Head?

No, my Lord, cried I, greatly surprized both at the Familiarity and Discourse, which did not suit me by any Means; but I have not been used to such Conversation; neither did good Mrs. *Flairant* prepare me for any such Reception; no Doubt she had her Reasons for it; I will not give myself the Trouble of guessing at them; but, shall content myself with desiring your Lordship to allow me to take my Leave of you: Having thus said, I made a low Curtesy, and would have gone out of the Room.

La Flairant then ran up to me, and, taking me by the Hand, don't you see, cried she, that the Marquis is only in Jest; and that what he has said, is meerly the Effect of that Gaiety of Temper, which, he has told you, is his natural Disposition. Bless me! what a Fool you are, continued she, whispering in my Ear; let him alone; he has the Use of Nothing but his Speech; and it would be hard to deny him that: In short, don't flatter yourself with any vain Imaginations; in your present Extremity, you must take great Care how you let this Opportunity slip, if you do you are utterly ruined.

Come, my dear Child, continued the profligate old Sorceress, perceiving me to be in Tears, have a little Courage; you have heard from his own Mouth that he requires Nothing but a little Chat; you have Wit enough, pray what will that cost you? If you have any Value for me, don't offer to affront me so, as to insist on going away directly; you would reduce me to the greatest Perplexity imaginable: You are too much my Friend, for me to make it any Secret to you, that the
Marquis,

Marquis has lent me Money ; and should you persist in your Resolution of running away in an Ill-Humour, he might imagine I have put some Trick upon him ; in which Case, you may yourself feel the ill Effects of his Indignation. He is the Master here ; and has a number of Domestic-ticks ; one Tinkle of a Bell brings them together ; and, then, we shall not be the strongest ; if you are absolutely determined, therefore, not to engage in this Affair, let us, at least, bring ourselves off with Honour, by promising to come again ; after that you shall be at your Liberty ; and I will never mention it more to you.

Whilst *La Flairant* was arguing with me in this Manner by ourselves, the old Marquis had thrown himself back upon his Couch, where he laughed ready to split his Sides ; crying out from Time to Time, admirably acted, i'Faith ! What Artifice !——Oh ! the subtle Jades ! Would not they persuade any one that they were in Earnest !

If you give the least Way to the Solicitations of a Seducer, you expose yourself to all the Dangers that attend upon being seduced ; accordingly, the pitiful Air, with which *La Flairant* pleaded with me in Behalf of her Interest ; and the Risque we should run as she represented, of being ill used, in Case I should obstinately insist upon going away abruptly, and without taking a handsome Leave ; all this, I say, kept me where I was ; but did not induce me, to alter my Conduct, in the least : And, in effect, I gave *La Flairant* to know, that I did not understand jesting with such Matters ; and, therefore, if any the least Shadow of Violence was offered me, I would immediately proceed to the utmost Extremities.

How ! cried the perfidious *La Flairant* interrupting me, what do you mean by that ? Can
you

you think, whatever Obligations I may have to the Marquis, I would carry Things so far as to be his Procurefs? Alas! alas! how little do you know me? No, no, believe me, as poor as I stand here, I would send even a Prince to the Deuce, who should be so bold as to——

The old Hag had not Time, to make an End of her hypocritical Protestations; for the Marquis, being tired with laughing, as you know, we grow weary of every Thing, prevented her going on, by calling to us, and asking, whether our Dialogue was to last for ever. Hereupon, we approach'd him again; and, whether my Eyes, which were still red with the Tears I had shed, gave him a somewhat better Opinion of me; or, whether he thought it would not be right, to be too rough with me at first; what it was I can't tell, but, be it what it will, he kept a little Guard upon his Words; and behaved in such a Manner, that I could not excuse myself, from sitting down at Table with him. In effect, Supper pass'd over, with Abundance of Wit and Humour, on his Side; and I could not forbear laughing several Times; to say the Truth, the old Nobleman, is very diverting; and, notwithstanding his labouring under so much Infirmary, retains such a sprightly Temper, that induces one not to grudge, the Time one spends with him.

Before we parted, which was not till very late, *La Flairant*, and the Marquis, had a long Whisper together; the old Nobleman's Eyes, which were often fixed upon me, left me no Room to doubt my being the Subject of it; I pretended, however, not to take Notice thereof. At last, a Footman coming to inform us, that the Coach, which had been ordered to carry us back, was ready, we took our Leave; *La Flairant* promising

ing the Marquis, that we would return next Morning, and spend the Day with him ; which he charged her divers Times not to fail ; whilst I only answered, by a Curtesy, and with a firm Resolution, never to set Foot in the House again.

In effect, that I might give the old Sorceress no room, to flatter herself with any such Hopes, I let her know, as soon as we were in the Coach, that I would never again darken the Marquis's Door ; she would fain have prevailed on me to change my Resolution ; but, finding me inflexible upon this Head, she told me since it was so, we must not think any more on it. All the rest of the Way, I was very pensive ; she did what lay in her Power to divert me ; but what had all ready passed, had opened my Eyes, as to *La Flairant's* Character ; accordingly, I had come to a firm Determination, to break off all Correspondence with her, for the future ; and accept of the Offer made me by the Dutchess ; hoping that, in Consideration of this Sacrifice of myself, Heaven would have Pity on me.

But alas ! it was then too late to draw back ; I had already engaged myself too far ; my Fate was, in a Manner, decided ; and the unadvised Step I had then taken, must, probably, have proved the first Advance to Destruction, had it not been for you, Sir, whom Providence made the happy Instrument, to preserve me from it.

To return from whence I have digressed. The Coach having stopt, as had been ordered, at the Corner of the Street, where the Dutchess lives, that no Notice might be taken, in the Family, of my returning Home so late, we alighted there, and went on Foot to the Door. I trembled every Inch of me, when I found, the Porter was gone to Bed ; and that, by knocking him up, we

should, perhaps, disturb the the whole House ; mean while, the old wicked Bedlame, (who, undoubtedly, had kept me out so late on Purpose, that she might the better gain her own Ends) told me, that, in my present Circumstances, not having any Measures to keep, there was no Remedy but to knock hard ; unless I would go Home with her ; in which Case, we would determine, next Day what Course I should take.

Upon hearing this Proposal, the Fear of seeing myself in the Hands of *La Flairant*, against whom I had conceived an implacable Antipathy, made me thunder at the Gate, without making her any Answer. Hereupon, the Porter, looking out of a Window, asked, what we wanted, at such an unseasonable Hour : I told him my Name ; to which he replied, you may go, *Mademoiselle*, and seek a Lodging, at the Place from whence you came ; my Instructions are positive as to you. Her Grace has made Enquiry after you several Times ; she wanted to speak with you, before she went to Bed ; and, being greatly surprized at your going out so late ; and yet more at your not returning by One o'Clock ; she sent Orders to me, that, in Case you should come back, on any Pretence whatever, the Door should be shut against you : I am sorry for it, continued he, *Mademoiselle*, but I am obliged to do my Duty ; and having thus said, he shut his Window.

Thunderstruck at this News, I sat me down, on a Stone-Bench that was by the Gate, and began to weep bitterly ; upon which, that Crocodile, *La Flairant*, pretended to seem very much concerned ; and used several unavailing Arguments to comfort me ; but always concluding with endeavouring to persuade me to go Home with her. I had resolved to pass the Night at the Gate ;

Gate ; to wait her Grace's getting up ; to throw myself at her Feet ; to implore her Pardon, and Compassion ; and, in short, to run the Hazard of all imaginable Afflictions, rather than trust myself in the Hands of that old Sorceress : But the profligate Wretch, suspecting, undoubtedly, my Design, made me, change my Mind, by assuring me, we should run the Risque of being murdered, if we did not come to some Determination ; in a Word, that we must choose one of the two, either to get Admittance at the *Hotel* (which she said, no doubt, finding it was impossible) or hasten Home to her Lodging.

Did not you see, cried this perfidious She-Devil, pretending to tremble, a Man who eyed us narrowly, as we got out of the Coach ? How do you know whether he has not some ill Design upon us ? And whether he is not planted there by some Street-Robbers, who may, perhaps, strip us, and throw us into the River, which is but a little Way from hence ? Let us begone, my dear Child, and get into the High-Streets ; as People are passing continually, we shall there be in Safety. Bless me ! had we but foreseen what was to happen, we would not have suffered the Coach to return ; and had you been advised by me, we should not have exposed ourselves to these Dangers : Having thus said, the old Bedlame drew me along with her.

To say the Truth, she had put me into such a Fright, that I readily complied with whatever she pleased ; in effect, I did not much question the Truth of what she said, because I had myself also seen the Man of whom she spoke. I must confess, pursued *Lusnette* (not imagining, certainly, that I was the Person, who had frightened

her so terribly) that, as soon as I entered *La Flairant's* Habitation, my Heart began to beat. The By-Street; the Entrance into the House, which was narrow, dirty, and dark; the Neighbours, who were still up, and several of whom we met; divers Whispers, whereof I took Notice, with certain ugly Expressions which were let drop, at a Venture, made me shudder for Fear, and did not portend me any Good. The Nature, likewise of the Furniture, which consisted only of a sorry Bed, and four old Chairs, gave me a deplorable Prospect of the Ruin I had brought upon myself, and which there attended me; besides which, the View of one single Room, and the Thought of lying with the old Bedlame, was no inconsiderable Mortification; nor no small Addition to my Grief and Sorrow.

I had the poor Comfort, however, of finding myself mistaken, as to this last Particular; for *La Flairant* opening a little Door, and conducting me into a small Chamber, very prettily furnished, and full of all Sorts of Bundles of different Forms, this said she, chucking me under the Chin, was my Daughter's Apartment; won't you be like a little Queen here? Come, come, before three Days are expired, you will not be willing to change Places with a Dutchesse. Having thus premised, she locked up all the Parcels beforementioned, in a private Cupboard; advised me to go to Bed; and after wishing me a good Night's Rest, went out of the Room, and locked me in.

This Circumstance fully confirmed me in the Opinion, that I was no longer at my own Disposal; which Thought made me pass the few Hours allotted for my Repose very uncomfortably. On my awaking suddenly out of a Slumber, which

which had been often broken, I was yet more confirmed in this Belief; I heard the Door of my Chamber opened softly, and on looking between the Curtains, perceived it was the old Sorceress, who went on Tiptoe; she was accompanied by a very ill-looking Fellow, who had a little Parcel under his Arm: Are you asleep, cried *La Flairant* to me? I made no Answer but fetched my Breath harder than before, to induce her to believe me fast; she is safe, continued she, in a low Voice; she is but a Chicken; she will soon be used to my Ways.

I could not hear what Reply the Man made; but the Cupboard was opened soon after, the Bundle clapt in there, and some Money delivered by *La Flairant*; this Management, however, did not give me any Suspicion; I imagined it to be something, relating to one of the Branches, of the old Bedlame's Trade; but, before the End of the Day, I was obliged to be of another Opinion.

After *La Flairant*, and the Fellow before-mentioned, had whispered a little together, they approached my Bed; you may judge, whether I trembled or not; I shut my Eyes, however, and persisted in counterfeiting Sleep; notwithstanding which, I was sensible by the Light that entred within my Curtains, that they held them open; and was fully convinced thereof, by *La Flairant's* crying, well what say you to her? I think her perfectly charming answered the Man; and wish you much Joy on your having so valuable a Treasure in your Possession.

No more was said at that Time; away they went; and the Door was again locked; upon which I gave myself up afresh to a thousand melancholy Reflections. What shall I add more?

La Flairant returned a little after and used many Arguments, which it would be needless to repeat, to convince me how happy I should soon be with her: Above all, she charged me to be complaisant and civil to her Friends; declared to me that she entertained Company; and took particular Care, to make me dress my Head to the best Advantage, in order to my receiving them.

In effect, that very Day, divers Gentlemen came to *La Flairant's*; whose Familiarity, with the old Profligate, inducing me to judge, no Good could ensue from thence, I resolved to make my Escape. Accordingly, a favourable Opportunity offering, as I thought, I took Advantage thereof; but one of the Neighbours, who was undoubtedly of the same Stamp, happening to meet me, as I was going out of the House, forced me back, and restored me to the old Hag; who having perceived my Flight, was running down Stairs, in Pursuit of me, with a Face, as red as Scarlet, with Anger.

As soon as she saw me again, she received me, with a Couple of hearty Cuffs on the Ear; treated me like a naughty Woman; locked me up in my Room; and swore bitterly, if I had the Boldness again, to make such another Attempt, she would cut me in Pieces, or strangle me, without any Mercy.

What could I do, when reduced to such an Extremity? To apply to Heaven for Help, and put some Constraint upon myself, I thought would not be amiss; accordingly, I invented so plausible an Excuse for what had happened, and disguised my real Sentiments so well, by affecting for two or three Days to seem reconciled to my Condition, that no more Words were made about what
was

was past. The artful old Sorceress, however, in order to try me, and see whether I persisted in my Design of running away, went several Times out of her Chamber, and left me at Liberty in my own; but, fortunately, I had some Suspicion of the Snare laid for me, wherefore I made not the least Offer to stir, though she allowed me sufficient Leisure for that Purpose.

Finding at last, after her having left me alone three Times, that I did not attempt it in the least, she embraced me in one of her good Moments, and, perhaps, out of Policy, acknowledged the Trap she had laid for me. I pretended to be surprized thereat; assured her I had come to a Resolution, and protested, that all Things considered, I thought myself very happy with her. This Assurance, which I accompanied with several flattering Expressions, gained me Abundance of Caresses and Promises, that if I would be ruled by her, she would render me the happiest Girl in Town.

We were upon this Head, when we were prevented from proceeding any farther, by the coming in of a Woman with a large Bundle of Things under her Arm. *La Flairant* immediately hurried her away into the Chamber where I lay, and locked herself up therein with her. The Curiosity, natural to our Sex, which was in some Measure excusable in the ticklish Situation wherein I then was, induced me to listen to their Discourse; and there was no room to doubt, by what I saw through the Key-hole, and what I overheard, that I was with a perfect Receiver of stolen Goods, and, perhaps, something yet worse.

It was then I looked upon myself as irrecoverably undone; and I was still making the most melancholy Reflections, upon this new and shocking
Discovery,

Discovery, when somebody knocked at the Door. Before I would venture to open it, I rapt at the Chamber wherein *La Flairant* had shut herself; and, not hearing any one answer, redoubled my Strokes thereat. No-body yet coming, I looked again through the Key-hole, surprized at her Silence and Delay; and, to my no small Astonishment, perceived a private Door, of which I had not before been aware, at the Foot of the Bed wherein I had laid, which opened into another Room, whither the two Profligates, no doubt, had withdrawn themselves; and which I could not see from the Place where I was.

In the mean while, hearing somebody thunder again at the Door, by good Providence, I ventured at last to open it, and saw you Mons. *L'Abbe*; imagine my Surprise, Sir, continued the charming *Lusnette*; you know the rest: Heaven sent you, undoubtedly, to snatch me from the Dangers to which I must have been exposed, sooner or later, in that infamous and dreadful Place. I believe you don't question my having some Gratitude, after so signal a Service; in vain should I use my utmost Efforts to make you sensible thereof; such unparalleled Obligations, as you have laid me under——

Here I interrupted that lovely Creature; and protested, I was too happy in having chanced to be the fortunate Instrument of doing her some little good Offices; assuring her at the same Time, that, for the future, it should be my whole Study to become agreeable to her, and to convince her that I was entirely devoted to her Service: This said, I took my Leave of her, though not without Regret.



C H A P. III.

Bigand again meets Rametzi. His excessive Joy, on the Hopes given him by Bigand, of seeing Likinda once more. The uncommon Prudence and Discretion of Lufinette. Bigand makes an open Declaration of his Passion for her.

HOW swiftly the Time passes away when we are with what we love ! It was past Midnight when I left *Lufinette*, and I hesitated, for that Reason, whether I should go to *Rametzi's*, or not ; however, resolving not to have any Thing wherewith to reproach myself, I determined, at last, to go thither ; hoping to have better Luck than the two last Times I was there.

I had already rung twice, however, at the Door, without having any Reason to imagine I had been heard ; nevertheless I rung again, though with very little Hopes, and was just ready to be going (being persuaded in my Mind that something extraordinary had happened to *Rametzi*) when a dazzling Light, which issued from a grated Wicket, whereof I had never before taken Notice, struck my Eyes on a sudden, and gave me to understand there was somebody at the Door.

It opened soon after, and a low Voice calling out to me, bid me come in ; which I did, though not without some Hesitation, not knowing the Person who spoke to me, by Reason of a Dark-Lanthorn, which kept him concealed ; but it was not long before I was agreeably put out of Suspense, by finding it was my Gentleman himself.

self. Scarce had he shut the Door, before he discovered himself; you are heartily welcome, said he, but I did not expect you so late at Night; to the best of my Remembrance, we agreed upon another Hour for our Meetings: I have made you wait a little, therefore, but you ought not to take it ill, my Safety requires some Precaution; I have laid it down as a Rule to myself, never to open my Door before I know my Men; and your Change of Dress, which prevented my calling you to Mind readily, alarmed me a little.

I then told *Rametzi* of my having been twice before to see him, but to no Purpose, and that it had given me Abundance of Uneasiness: I have been in the Country, said he; I wanted some Simples, to preserve me from an Illness which my Knowledge in Medicine enabled me to foresee; and which were not to be found, but at some Distance from *Paris*; where I have been obliged to stay some Days.

But have you any thing new whereof to inform me, continued the Philosopher, looking me steadfastly in the Face? Ah! undoubtedly, your repeated Visits; your Countenance; a Kind of Satisfaction that is visible in your Eyes; all these assure me you have some agreeable News for me; let me hear it this Instant—— Good Heavens! Is it possible *Likinda* should be still alive? Can she be at *Paris*, as I suspected? Have you found her out? In the Name of all that is most dear to you, good *Bigand*, keep me not upon Thorns! What! shall I see *Likinda* once more! To add to my Happiness, shall I find her faithful also! Merciful Stars! Can it be possible!—— *Rametzi* wanted me to answer all these Questions, without Delay, and yet his Impatience and Emotion was so

so great, he did not allow me Time for it; at last however he held his Tongue.

I entered, then, upon the Business in Hand; but, though he sat close to me, he hardly thought himself near enough to hear me; his Eyes, his Ears, his Mouth, all were upon the Stretch to devour my Words: I acquainted him with the Conversation I had overheard between the two Strangers, and what had ensued thereupon; not without exaggerating my own Diligence, in diving into this mysterious Affair; this done, I informed him of my almost positive Surmise, that the pretended Marchioness *de Viatelli* was no other than *Likinda* herself.

Unquestionably, cried *Rametzi*, at every seeming Proof I advanced; after which, he made me repeat divers Times what has been said upon this Head, in the third Part of these Adventures; and the more he reflected thereon, the more he was confirmed in this Opinion. If I had intended to write a Romance, I should not have failed relating Word for Word, all the passionate Expressions which his Transports made him utter; but such genuine Memoirs as these ought not to be prophaned by vain Fictions; a Man need only to have been smitten himself, to be able to divine them easily; or else to fall heartily in Love forthwith, if he is absolutely curious upon that Head, and has a Mind to be made the more sensible thereof.

To return from whence we have digressed; it was resolved to be at the Convent *de*——, by Ten next Morning, in order to proceed on our Enquiry into the Truth of our Surmises. I understood my own Interest too well, to fail of extolling my own Industry and the Use to which, as I pretended, I had put the Hundred *Louis d'Ors* I had received from him; in effect, I saw myself almost

most at the End of my Revenues, with a Mistress upon my Hands, who could not hope for any thing, but from me ; and Poverty is often too hard for Honesty, especially when one has not had a generous Education.

I told *Rametzi*, therefore, that, it being necessary for me to have Admittance every where, in order to the finding out *Likinda*, I had made use of his Money, to provide me such a Garb as might procure me free Access even to the best of Company. He readily approved of whatever I advanced upon this Head ; and that he might himself act conformably to my Views, assured me he would also dress himself, next Morning, in a handsome Manner, being fully persuaded, nevertheless, that he should not be known again by *Likinda*, being so much disfigured as he was by the Blowing up of the Ship.

He entertained me afterwards about the exquisite Pleasure he should take in being present at what his Mistress would say of him, without her suspecting in the least that he was so very near her ; in short, he was in perfect Raptures at the very Thought : We discoursed a long while upon this Head, and there was no Sign that *Rametzi* would ever have done ; nevertheless, it was very late ; I had every Day sufficient Employment to weary me heartily before Night ; and I was then quite tired out, and spent ; accordingly, I told him so ingenuously, upon which he offered me a Bed : But I represented to him, that it would be necessary to be prepared as to the Manner how I should break the Ice next Day ; as also, that it would be proper for me to enquire previously, underhand, how Matters stood, that, in Case any Accident should have happened, he might be armed against it ; he was entirely of my Opinion, wherefore we parted,

parted, for that Night, and I hastened to my own Lodging.

The first Thing I did, next Morning, as soon as I was dressed, was to hurry to *Lusnette*; pleasing myself with the Thought of surprizing her by the Richness of my Cloaths: In effect, I fancied within myself, that I might very well pass Muster; and did not at all question that this Disguise would be advantageous to me. Even they, who have the justest Way of Thinking, are hurried away by Custom; and the Dress of a Man, like the Decorations of a Play, very often makes him received with Approbation, when he would not otherwise meet with such a favourable Entertainment.

I was confirmed in this Opinion by the more than usual Deference and Respect shewn by *Lusnette's* Landlady, who did not know me in my new Garb; at which I could not forbear smiling. After having diverted myself a little While, at her Perplexity, on not being able to recollect me, for I had sent in Word, I was one of her Acquaintance; I then told her my Name; and, in order to put a good Face upon the Change of my Habit, pretended I had been obliged before to give Way to Necessity; but, that being lately become my own Master by the Death of an Uncle, who had kept me in Subjection, and had resolved upon my being an Ecclesiastic, I had chosen a State of Life more agreeable to my own Inclinations.

The good Landlady, highly delighted with the seeming Confidence I reposed in her, approved readily of my Way of thinking, and moralized abundantly upon that Head; I interrupted her, however, to enquire after *Lusnette*: I believe she is still asleep, said she; then pausing a Moment,

Ah! Sir, continued she, what an amiable Sister have you! never in my Life did I know one who had so much Discretion; would you think it, that she insisted upon my locking her up in her Room during the Night? I was extremely well pleased with that charming Creature for this judicious Precaution, especially in a House which is entirely let into Lodgings, and where there is no Want of young Sparks who snatch at all Opportunities to get acquainted with a pretty Woman. I congratulated myself, therefore, on my good Luck, in having placed my Affections on so deserving an Object; and went to my pretended Sister, with my Mind thus prepossessed in her Favour.

Lusnette, whom I had pre-acquainted the Day before with my intended Metamorphosis, had the good Sense to contain herself, when I entered her Apartment; I could perceive, however, to my Satisfaction, that the Richness of my Dress surprized her; and that she eyed me with an Attention which did not presage me any Ill. She even confessed to me, after the Landlady was gone out of the Room, that she liked me better in that Habit, than in that of an Abbot, and it may be easily imagined, that I was not behind-hand with her in Point of Gallantry.

Compliments being over, *Lusnette* assumed a more serious Air, and begged me, with a Kind of Confusion, which rendered her yet more charming than before, to give her Leave to tell me her Mind freely upon several Points which had lately employed her Thoughts. My Answer was, she might do it, without Reserve: and I would not only hear her with the utmost Attention, but would pay a blind Submission to her Desires.

She seemed satisfied with this Assurance; and, depending upon a Way of thinking, which is not
very

very common, she told me, that the Regard I had shewn her, the extraordinary Services I had rendered her, and, above all, my Discretion and honourable Behaviour were so strongly imprinted upon her Mind, that she was resolved not to make an ill Use of my Generosity: That she was but too sensible, being destitute of every Thing as she was, she must necessarily be extremely chargeable to me in a ready-furnished Lodging, where the Expence of Chamber-Rent and Boarding was exorbitant; and that, therefore, my Interest being become dear to her, she would take care thereof: That, to the End she might be enabled so to do, she begged me to look out for a Convent, wherein she might be at a more reasonable Rate; and that, thereby, I should be delivered from the above-mentioned Inconveniencies; it being her Design to have Recourse to the Dutchess, as soon as she should be in the Retirement she desired: She added, that after the malicious Reports, which had spread about her, this was become absolutely necessary; besides which, it was proper for a Maiden, in order to her avoiding certain Opportunities which are always dangerous; and against which, therefore, a Woman of Virtue ought to be upon her Guard.

All she said, on this Occasion, was put together, with so much Wit, and Delicacy, that it was a difficult Matter, to give an Answer thereto; in effect, this her Discourse touched me to the Quick; and alarmed me to such a Degree, that my Mind, being oppressed with the Fear of losing an Object, now become so dear to it, was greatly troubled.

The Alteration, that was visible in my Countenance, was taken Notice of by *Lusnette*; whereupon, she asked me kindly, whether, in

what she had said, she had let any Word fall, which had displeased me : I assured her, with a melancholy Air, of the contrary ; confessing to her, nevertheless, that, if she deprived me of her dear Company, she would render me the most wretched of Mankind, for the Rest of my Life.

My little Charmer seeming surprized at this Speech, and desiring me to explain it, I took Advantage of the Opportunity to declare my Passion ; and assured her, if she persisted in her Design to be gone from me, I should not be able to survive it, or, at the best, should languish and die away by Inches. *Lusnette*, however, warded off, very artfully, all the Intreaties which Love put into my Mouth, to induce her to change her Resolution. Accordingly, she represented to me, how unbecoming it would be for her to continue in a ready-furnished Lodging ; that possibly, it might be found out, that I was not really her Brother ; in which Case, she put it to my own Conscience, what I thought would be said of her ? In short, all I could prevail on that virtuous Maiden to grant me, was a little Time, wherein to bring myself to a Resolution, upon this Head ; after which, I promised to gain so far upon myself, as to agree to the suffering so cruel a Separation.

In the mean while, the Hour, when I had engaged to meet *Rametzi*, being upon the Point of striking, I rose up, and took my Leave. *Lusnette* seemed surprized, at my quitting her so early, and reproached me for it very tenderly ; I was sensibly affected therewith ; and assured her, I would make all possible Haste to return ; as also, that I would not then leave her, were it not for some Reasons of the utmost Importance, which were not

not altogether foreign to her own Interest. In effect, I took so much Pleasure, in the Conversation of one so dear to me, that had it not been for a Clock, which gave me Notice, I could not stay any longer, I should have forgot, not only the *Italian*, but the whole World.

As soon as I had thus broken loose from the Object of my Affections, I hurried away to *Rametzi*, who was waiting for me with an inexpressible Patience. In effect, he upbraided me with my Negligence ; was perfectly upon Thorns ; and I believe, being so much used, as he was, to grumble, had made some extraordinary Soliloquies. Alas ! said he, as we were going out, one may see plainly you have never been in Love ; if you had, you would have sympathized more with me in my Uneasiness.

I excused myself as well as possible ; after which we got into a Coach, and ordered it to drive to the Convent, where the Marchioness *de Viatelli* lived : Being arrived there, we alighted ; and sent in Word of our being there under Family Names, well known to *Rametzi*, which he was sufficiently assured would be welcome to *Likinda*, in case we should be so happy, not to be mistaken in our Opinion, that she was there concealed, under a borrowed Name.



C H A P. IV.

Bigand's Reflections on the Alteration, made by Dress, in Rametzi. His Interview with Likinda.

WHILST we were waiting in a Parlour, the Answer of one of the Nuns, who was gone in with our Message, I fixed my Eyes earnestly upon *Rametzi*, who then, appeared to me so passable, and so different, from what he had always seemed to me before, that I had much ado to conceive, how Dress alone could produce so extraordinary an Alteration. His Face, so singular and odd, as I have described it, in its proper Place, was no longer the same; being freed from a long dirty Beard, which before disguised it, and set off with a very handsome full Peruke, whose Sides concealed good Part of his Scars; he had a noble Presence, a sensible Look, and an Air of Grandeur, that commanded Respect. This reconciled me, to the Credibility of that Part of his Story, where the Passion of *Likinda* is painted, in such lively Colours; and which had before shocked my Belief pretty much; it convinced me likewise, of the Truth of this Reflection, that a Diamond is not the less a Diamond for being rough; though the Manner of its being cut, and set, is a considerable Addition to its Beauty.

The

The good Nun, for whose Return we waited impatiently, came back again, in a few Minutes; and told us, in a solemn Tone of Voice, that the Marchioness *de Viatelli* would be with us in a little while; which said, she held down her Head modestly, and withdrew with a slow and even Step. *Rametzi* could not hear this welcome News, without shewing very visibly how sensibly he was affected therewith; I observed, that he changed Colour, and could hardly support himself upon his Legs; insomuch that I grew afraid, the Concern I saw him under would be too violent, both for his Health, and his present Circumstances. I went up to him, therefore, and reminded him, of the Part he had proposed to act; and seeing him almost motionless, I advised him to go into a Room adjoining, and allow himself some Time to recover his Spirits.

He confessed to me, then, that in Spite of all his Resolution, the Emotions he then felt were too strong for him; and not finding himself able, to bear the first Sight, of a Mistress so dear to him, he followed my Advice. It was Time he should do so; for the Marchioness entered the Parlour a Moment after, leaning upon a young Maiden, whom I took to be her Woman. She was in second Mourning in an Undress, and prodigiously dejected; nevertheless, her Beauty and majestick Air, surprized me to that Degree, that I was within a little of being as much disordered as *Rametzi*: But might not my being prepossessed in her Favour contribute, in some Measure; thereto?

The Beginning of a Conversation, which was likely to be so affecting, did not prove so difficult, as I had imagined it would; the Lady broke the Ice herself, by enquiring after the Family, whose
Name

Name I had assumed. *Rametzi* had previously prepared me for this, and, accordingly, I made her suitable Answers to her Questions ; when changing the Discourse, on a sudden ; tell me, Sir, said she, one Thing, at which I am the most surprized, in the World : Two important Reasons induced me, since my coming into this Country, to conceal both my Name, and Quality ; I did yet more ; to provide against all the Inconveniencies of Discovery, I immured myself in a Convent ; and concerted all Measures for keeping myself concealed, in this Retirement, with such uncommon Precaution and Secresy, that I imagined it absolute impossible to find me out ; nevertheless, your present Visit convinces me, that all I have done to this End, has been to no Manner of Purpose ; and not only tells me, that you are acquainted with all the Subterfuges, to which I have had Recourse, but also that the Place of my Retirement is found out.

It is true, a Prince, to shun whose Addresses and Solicitations I took Refuge here, has sent hither in Search of me ; because, it is probable, that he makes Enquiry after me, in all Places whatever, to which he can possibly imagine me to have retired ; and he has Interest enough to gain Admittance every where ; but I have caused such an Answer to be given, to one who has been here in his Name, that I am in Hopes, he will desist from troubling me any more.

But, as for you, Sir, continued *Likinda* (for it was she) the Case is quite different ; the Names, which were sent in to me, are so dear and so nearly related to me, that I was not able, to get the better of my Curiosity, to enquire after a Family, for which I have the greatest Value, and from which I have been so long parted. Satisfy
me

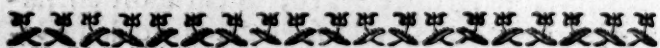
me, then, I beseech you, as to a Point which so much concerns me ; tell me, by what Miracle, you have been able to dive into so many Secrets ; as also, why I find you alone, when I was informed two Relations were here waiting for me ? I'll assure you, ingenuously, all these Things cause me some Uneasiness, and perplex me cruelly.

I should have been very much at a Loss, had I been obliged to answer all these Questions ; it is impossible to foresee every Thing ; it was necessary however, to make some Reply ; I had Recourse, therefore, to Artifice ; and, to cut short all farther Interrogatories, told *Likinda*, it would be very easy for me to satisfy all her Demands, but that I must conjure her, first, to inform me, by what Miracle, she had escaped the dreadful Danger to which she had been exposed at Sea, when the Ship took Fire, and was blown up ; as also, whether she had not heard any News of the famous *Rametzi*, who, as I had been assured, was on board the same Vessel, at that Time ; that it concerned me the more, to have this Question resolved, because I was not only related to that celebrated Philosopher, but united to him by the strictest Ties of Friendship.

Scarce had I uttered, these Words, when the beauteous Eyes, of the lovely *Likinda*, were drowned in Tears ; which she endeavoured, in vain, to conceal from me ; Ah ! Sir, cried she, fetching a deep Sigh, as if her Heart would have broken, what a dreadful Event do you recal to my Remembrance ! Merciful Heavens ! Who can have informed you of that horrible Accident ? Alas ! I see but too plainly, that I am perfectly well known by you ; and that it will be to no Purpose, to attempt to conceal any Thing from you

In

In vain, I fear, does your Affection, for the great *Rametzzi*, induce you, to flatter yourself with the Hopes, that he may have escaped, by the same good Fortune as myself; judge, by the Account, I am going to give you of that terrible Disaster, whether there can be any Room, to sooth yourself with that Expectation. Good Heavens! what have not I done, that I might have some Grounds, to feed myself with that Fancy! and what would not I still give, to have the least Reason to believe it!



C H A P. V.

By what Means Likinda was preserved after the dreadful Accident, of the Ship's blowing up. She lights upon her Brother again. To what Expedient, she has Recourse, in order to find out Rametzzi. The mutual Transports, of those two tender Lovers, on meeting again, so unexpectedly.

SINCE you are so well acquainted with *Rametzzi*, and are of *Venice*, continued the charming *Likinda*, I shall not endeavour to conceal from you the Regard, which all *Italy* knows I had for him: The Purity of my Sentiments need not make me blush to own them. They took rise from his Merit alone; and my Passion (if I may be allowed to make Use of that Term) owing its Birth to a Reputation justly acquired, never transgressed the Bounds of the most rigid Virtue; notwithstanding all the Ardour, which some have been pleased to ascribe to it, in order to cast a Blemish thereon. Forgive me, Sir, a
Preamble,

Preamble, which may seem to have been dictated by Self-Love; but, I am but superficially known by you, and perhaps, may have been represented to you in other Colours: Besides, this is all the Comfort that is now left me, under my grievous Misfortunes; why may not I be permitted, to take Advantage thereof?

It would be impossible for me, pursued the lovely *Venetian*, to tell you, by what dreadful Accident, the Ship, on board whereof *Rametzi* and I were, was set on Fire; but, before I proceed to that terrible Juncture, it is necessary, in order to convince you of the Severity of my Fate, you should know, that, by the most extraordinary Chance imaginable, my own Brother happened to be the Commander of that Vessel.

I was not only ignorant of this, but also that he was alive; some Misfortunes, to which you may be a Stranger, and which, nevertheless, you may be glad to know, had long banished him from the Republick: Just as he was about to run away, with the Wife of a Senator, he was taken in the very Fact; suffered a tedious Imprisonment; and had not escaped the Rigour of the Law, but by the powerful Interest of a Family, which was then possessed of the highest Dignities in the State; Love and Resentment had brought him back again to *Venice*, just at that critical Juncture; he had kept up a Correspondence with her, who had been the Occasion of all his Misfortunes; and being Master of more Foresight than Prudence, he had put in Execution the boldest, and rashest of Designs: In short, the Senator's Wife was carried off one Night, by her Lover, even from the very Arms of her Husband; and being disguised in a Man's Habit, was hurried on board his Vessel, which lay at
Anchor

Anchor, two Leagues below the City, for the Furtherance of this fool-hardy Enterprize.

When *Rametzi* and I fled for Refuge to the same Ship, in order to escape a Pursuit, which we had both great Reason to apprehend, the Captain was but just returned from his above-mentioned Expedition. An old Servant, who had accompanied me, and had brought him up, in his younger Years, no sooner set Eyes on him, than he called him again to Mind; and hastening to me, acquainted me with the News: Upon this, I could not withstand my strong Desire, to make myself known to a Brother, whom I had always tenderly loved; whom I imagined to have been dead; and upon whose Affection and Friendship, I could depend.

My first Thought was, to apprize *Rametzi* of this welcome News; but he happened not to be then with me; and during his Absence, my Brother chancing to come into the great Cabbin, which he had yielded to me, my Joy, at the unexpected Sight, of one so dear to me, made me catch him about the Neck and embrace him; acquainting him, at the same Time, both with my Name, and the Reason of my embarking on board his Vessel.

He received my Caresses with all the Ardour that could be expected from so near a Relation; but, though he acknowledged himself readily to be my Brother, he insisted on my keeping it inviolably secret, and bound me, on Forfeiture of my Honour, not to mention one Word of what he had told me, 'till we were arrived at the Port where the Ship's Crew were to be paid off.

Things were in this Situation, when one Day, my Brother, as he passed by me, desired me to leave my Chamber-Door open at Night, because
he

he wanted to talk with me about a Scheme he had laid, to render us all easy. I readily promised to wait for him; and he came, accordingly, at the Time appointed, and acquainted me with his Story; to which, for Want of an Opportunity, I had 'till then been a Stranger: In short, he was just about to inform me of his Scheme, when Somebody thundering at the Door, alarmed us with the News of the Ship's being on Fire. At this dreadful Intelligence, we troubled not ourselves, what might be thought of our being together, at so suspicious an Hour; but hurried out of the Cabbin: my Brother goes foremost; but scarce had he advanced a Step, when some unknown Person stabs him with a Poniard. All I could do, was to call out upon the Name of a Brother who was so dear to me; this dreadful Sight, together with the Flames which the Wind brought close to us, terrified me to that Degree, that it deprived me entirely of my Senses, and I fainted away.

Happy had it been for me, had I died whilst in that Condition! But it was decreed, that I should not escape any of the Sufferings prepared for me by angry Fortune: The horrible Crack the Ship gave when it was blown up brought me out of my Swoon; but I only opened my Eyes to be rendered the more sensible of my dreadful Condition. I am carried up into the Air, with an inexpressible Impetuosity and Violence, and, being just on the Point of shooting down again, with equal Rapidity, am every Moment in Expectation of the fatal Fall which should shiver me to Atoms: The Fright deprives me of my Senses a second Time, my whole Mass of Blood is chilled; my Heart beats, and that is all; in short, I don't come again to myself, 'till I find somewhat catch hold on me suddenly behind; as if a power-

ful Hand had seized me, and interposed between me and Death. Hope again revives in me; I venture to open my Eyes, and trembling look about to see what Case I am in; Merciful Heavens! who would believe it! The Branch of a lofty Tree that hung in the Way, as I was falling, had intangled itself in my Cloaths, and kept me suspended in the Air. Would not one have sworn that my cruel Fate had only delayed my Death, to render it yet more terrible, by all these preparatory Circumstances?

What could I do, in this new Extremity, but implore the Assistance of Heaven? It was impossible to escape without a fresh Miracle! The Wind shook the Branch on which I hung violently; and having full Scope to take my Gown, like a Sail, gave so brisk a Motion to my Body, thus suspended, that I had all the Reason in the World to expect nothing but Death. Mean while, the Clouds, which glided swiftly over each other, deprived me of the Sight of the Moon, which at best gave but a glimmering Light; then was I surrounded with a Darkness of whose Horrors my deplorable Condition made me but too sensible; Or, if a faint Glimpse of the disturbed Luminary now and then darted through a brightish Cloud, it was only to terrify my Eyes with a Scene no less dreadful. A tempestuous and foaming Sea drove the angry Surges to the very Foot of the Tree whereon I hung; insomuch that they seemed to demand me as a Prey, which was their Due, and which they ought already to have swallowed up; and to complain, by their hollow Roaring, of my having so long escaped them.

In these horrible and continual Alarms did I pass the Remainder of the Night; at Break of Day, I found some Change in my melancholy Condition:

on: The Wind ceasing on a sudden, I had Reason to think (after having withstood such repeated and violent Shocks) my Body was hung so fast upon the Branch, that the being devoured by Birds of Prey, or perishing with Hunger, were the two only Dangers I had then to apprehend.

By good Providence, however, the Lamentations I could not forbear making, both on Account of the exquisite Pains occasioned by my Burns, and the unparalleled Horrors of my wretched State, were over-heard by some Wood-Cutters, who were coming to work in the Forest where I hung. Hereupon, they searched about for me; and, having at last found me, were moved to Compassion by my terrible Situation, and made all possible Haste to take me down: This done, they carried me to a neighbouring Hamlet, with Abundance of Humanity, where they gave me all the Relief that lay in their Power. Having spent some Weeks there, in order to my Recovery, after so many Fatigues and Hurts, my first Care was to have Enquiry made in the Villages adjacent, whether no One had escaped from a Shipwreck, which had happened by the Blowing up of a Vessel, not many Miles from that Coast. All my Enquiries, upon this Head proving fruitless, I procured Remittances for a considerable Sum, rewarded my Deliverers generously, and set out for *Paris*; where I no sooner arrived, than I put myself in Mourning, being fully persuaded, both my Brother and *Rametzi* were in the silent Grave.

My first Care, after being settled in this great City, was to have Advertisements inserted in all the publick Papers, and printed Bills dispersed all over the Kingdom, promising a great Reward to any one, who should bring me News of two

Gentlemen that had been blown up in a Vessel that was on the *French* Coasts, on a certain Day mentioned therein : I flattered myself with the Hopes, that if either *Rametzi* or my Brother had escaped, this might be a Means of their letting me hear from them ; but four tedious Months passed over my Head, without my reaping any Benefit from this Expedient.

At last, one Day, as I was ruminating pensively on the Rigour of my Fate, a Sailor asked for me, who told me that he was on board the Vessel specified in the printed Bills, and that, having escaped Death on that Occasion by a downright Miracle, he had been informed in a neighbouring Village, that a Passenger had been taken out of the Sea by some Fishermen, the very Night when that dreadful Accident happened ; but that whatever Pains he had taken to come at his Name, he had not been able to get Knowledge thereof. I asked this Man a hundred Questions, but could not gain any farther Insight from him ; I rewarded him, however, liberally for his Trouble, and assured him, if he would return to that Village, and bring me any better Information from thence, he might depend upon a most ample Recompence.

In Expectation of some more certain Intelligence from this Sailor, I led a most solitary and uncomfortable Life ; and, I believe, should have died with Anguish and Despair, had it not been for a most unexpected Piece of good Fortune. As I was coming one Day out of Church, I saw two Men riding by ; the Aspect of the Foremost caused an Emotion in me ; I thought he greatly resembled my Brother : The Surprize seized upon my Spirits ; however, I had a sufficient Presence of Mind to have him followed ; merciful Heavens !

vens ! it was he himself ! Do but imagine our mutual Raptures !

After carrying him to my House, and having indulged ourselves in the Transports, that might be expected from so happy and unhop'd for a Meeting, he inform'd me, that the Wound, he had received from the Dagger, prov'd but slight; and that having been carried, by the Powder, some Miles from the Place, where the Vessel blew up, by the greatest Providence imaginable, he had got no farther Hurt, by that Disaster, than a most violent Shake; which had jarred his whole Body to such a Degree, that he imagin'd all his Limbs dislocated; that he happen'd to fall pretty near the Shore, and was taken up when just spent, by some charitable Persons, who came in a Boat to his Relief; and, that, having been caried to a neighbouring Town, he had been there inform'd, that several Persons, on board his Ship, had been sav'd, as well as himself; that he had always flatter'd himself, with the Hopes, that they, who were most dear to him, were of the Number of those who had escap'd; and, that being still prepossess'd with the most ardent Passion for the Senator's Wife before-mention'd, he had been travelling about, from Town to Town, ever since the Day of our Separation, in order to enquire, not only after her, but after me; and, that, in short, having had a printed Bill put into his Hands, wherein strict Enquiry was made, by a certain Lady, nam'd the Marchioness *de Viatelly*, about the Persons escap'd out of the very same Ship, he had set out from *Marseilles*, on Purpose to have an Interview with that Lady.

On his thus saying, I inform'd him, I was that very disconsolate Person, mention'd in the Bills, who had taken such indefatigable Pains, to

get some Intelligence of him, and *Rametzi*. Hereupon, my Brother, in order to comfort me, assured me, I should certainly see him again one Day or other ; being firmly persuaded, by the Account given him, in a Village, to which he went on Purpose, that Philosopher was one of those, whom Providence had miraculously preserved. My Brother, having thus informed me, hardly stayed with me two Hours ; his Impatience, to find again his beloved Mistress, not suffering him any longer to discontinue his Search after her.

However, the unexpected Sight of him, and the comfortable News he told me of *Rametzi*, restored me to a Health, which my Sorrows had greatly impaired ; and flattering myself with the Hopes, that I might, perhaps one Day, again light on the Object of my Affections, and that the same good Fortune, which had brought my Brother again to my Arms, might likewise send him once more, to bless my longing Eyes, I no more lived so retired as before. I went every Day to Church, and oftner twice than once ; I beseeched Heaven, earnestly, to hear my Prayers, for his Return ; and I frequently sought, in the Country, that Peace of Mind, to which I had been a Stranger, ever since the fatal Day, which had deprived me of what was dearest to me in the World.

One Afternoon, in Particular, when I went out to take the Air, on passing near the River, I saw a vast Multitude, assembled there together, on Account of a publick Rejoicing, and ordered the Coachman to stop a little. I had my Attention fixed upon Variety of amusing Objects ; when it was called off from thence, by a Man, who was endeavouring to break thro' the Crowd, with the utmost Precipitation. Without being
able

able to guess the Reason, I followed him with my Eye, and did not lose Sight of him one Moment ; his Face seemed to be drowned in Tears ; and Pity induced me to put my Head out of the Coach, in order to view him the better : When we are unhappy ourselves, we are ready to compassionate others. Scarce had Chance made this Unknown lift up his Eyes towards me, when he gave a loud Cry ; said somewhat which I did not hear ; and fell down in a Swoon : This caused so violent an Emotion in me, that my Woman, imagining something had frightened me, called out to the Coachman, and bid him drive on. Twice or thrice was my Mouth open, to order him to stop ; but, my Disorder was so great, and my Mind so strongly possessed, that this was the very Man, whose Loss I had so long bewailed, that I, not only, had not Resolution enough, but fell without any Senses into the Arms of my Woman.

My Servant, alarmed at seeing me in this Condition, resolved to remove me into a Tavern that was hard by ; where the Care that was taken of me, and the many Remedies they gave me, at last, brought me to myself. On coming again to my Senses, I was not a little surprized, to find myself surrounded with a numerous Company ; and to hear that the Prince *de——*, whom Chance had sent that Way, in his Return from Court, had himself been at the Pains, to be assisting towards my Recovery. He conducted me Home also ; when he took his Leave, desired Permission to pay his Respects to me ; and, on many Days after, made me a formal Declaration of his Love.

The Affection, I had conceived for *Rametzi*, rendered so troublesome a Passion offensive,
but,

but, in vain did I let him know my Sentiments; and represent to him, how fruitless it would be to endeavour at changing my Mind; it was all to no Purpose; his Highness was either continually at my House; or, if I shunned him, he followed me every where. I resolved, therefore, to get away privately from his Persecution; and accordingly retired hither, fully determined, if a Year passed without my hearing of *Rametzi*, to turn Nun.

Scarce had *Likinda* uttered these Words, which were followed by a Flood of Tears, when her Lover appeared, and threw himself at her Feet; he was not able to hold out any longer, against such positive Assurances of Constancy and Affection: It had been agreed between us, that I should tell her he was dead; he was desirous of seeing what Effect that News would produce; but, how vain are such Resolutions! Can we dissemble long with one we love? Had he not already reproached himself, twenty Times, for not shewing himself sooner? Did the tender *Likinda* deserve such a Trial at his Hands? Or, had she then the Power to revenge herself upon him for it? Her Eyes are again blessed with the Sight of a Lover whom she adores, whose Loss she has so long, and so bitterly lamented, how should she be susceptible of any other Emotions, than those which are occasioned by so joyful a Meeting.

I shall by no Means undertake to give a suitable Description of the lively Overflowings of the Heart, at this moving Interview. What did not these faithful and tender Lovers say to each other! The Surprise and excessive Transports of *Likinda* were very near being fatal to her; she finds herself ill, and, fortunately for her, the young Maid-

en, whom she had brought with her, was still there; otherwise, who could have helped her? We are more apt to die of Joy than Sorrow.

After the tumultuous Raptures, that were naturally to be expected from a so-long-wished-for Meeting, were a little over, and Love had been paid its Tribute, I received from both in my Turn, all the Testimonies of the most lively Acknowledgment. *Rametzi* took me in his Arms, and assured me, he should never be able to make me any Return, which he should think equal to what he owed me. I gave suitable Answers, to both their Compliments, upon this Head; after which, the Discourse turned upon what was to be done in the present Juncture. We were not long at a Loss about this; for the amiable *Likinda*, whose Wit was not inferior to her Beauty, immediately laid before us what Course would be most proper to be taken.

Her Determination was, that to avoid all farther Persecution from the Prince, who (as has been before observed) had already sent to the Convent, she would leave it that very Night; by which Means, she might shun an Interview, she had already refused, on several specious Pretences, which, however, could not avail long: As also, that, to prevent any Interruption from so powerful a Lover, they would privately take a Post-Chaise, and set out for *Venice*; and that, as soon as they were arrived there, she being then of Age, and become her own Mistress, would marry *Rametzi* publicly.

This being concluded on, the rest of the Morning was spent in consulting about the necessary Preparations for their Departure, which it was resolved should be next Morning. We then took Leave for the present, in order to get Things in Readiness

Readiness for it; a Post-Chaise was soon bought, and the rest did not take us up long; for where Money is not wanting, all Delays and Difficulties are easily got over.



C H A P. VI.

A surprizing Alteration in Bigand's condition. His parting with Rametzi and Likinda, who set out together for Italy.

HAD I given Way to my Impatience to see *Lusnette* again, I should have had Recourse to some Pretence, for leaving *Rametzi*; but finding him upon the Point of his Departure, and judging that, after all his Promises to me, these last Moments were of the utmost Importance to my own little Concerns, I redoubled my Care and Complaisance to please him. To my Comfort, his Gaiety seemed to promise me good Fortune; nevertheless, his Custom of talking to himself, and being full of Gestures, diverted more than one who passed by; and never left him, whilst we were in the Streets; nay, for my own Part, I could not forbear laughing thereat very heartily.

At last we arrived at the Door of *Rametzi's* Habitation, which he immediately opened; but so great was his Absence of Mind, that no sooner had he entered therein himself, than he shut it again full in my Face. I was quite confounded, as might well be judged at this unexpected Treatment; but I had no long Time to make any Reflections thereon; for my Gentleman returning again within a Moment, forgive my Rudeness,
dear

dear *Bigand*, cry'd he, I am so transported with Joy, that I am not myself: To find again, her one loves, beyond one's self, after having given her over for lost, occasions strange Revolutions in the human Mind; in effect, will not you allow, that my good Luck surpasses all that could have been hoped for, or expected?

I readily agreed, to whatever he advanced upon this Head, after which we went up Stairs, and sat down to Dinner; with the usual Precautions already mentioned. Our Discourse turned wholly upon the present Situation of Affairs; upon which Head *Rametzi* assured me, he was resolved to live for the future like other Men; to make it the whole Study and Pleasure of his Life, to render the beauteous *Likinda* happy; and that this should be the Bounds he would set to his Philosophy. That, as for all those sublime Secrets, he had acquired, and whereof he had told me, he would never more have Recourse to them; especially those whose whole Aim was sordid Interest, and Riches; because they were too apt to draw Envy upon those who possessed them; and consequently, were more likely to disturb that Felicity, he proposed to enjoy with his adored Fair-One, than to contribute towards it: He made, on this Occasion, an excellent moral Discourse, of the Weight of which I was fully sensible; laying it down as an undoubted Truth, that a plain, regular Course of Life was the most desirable of all, and the least liable to Uneasiness or Troubles.

I could have wished heartily, that *Rametzi* would have finished his Reflections, and come to some Conclusion, which might be conducive to my Interest? The Day hastened on apace, and I was not a little afraid, being so much taken up,

as he was, with his own Affairs, he would not have any Time, to think at all of mine: I was the more confirmed in this Opinion, on seeing the *Venetian* give over his Discourse, on a sudden; throw himself back in his Elbow-Chair; shut his Eyes; and sit as without Motion; and I was terribly apprehensive, he either found himself ill, or was fallen asleep; for he continued in this Posture about Half an Hour; I was mistaken, however, in my Conjectures; as to the Occasion of it; he was in a deep Thought; and was consulting within himself; nor was it long, before I found, I had not been forgotten, in this secret Consultation.

He rose up, on a sudden; lighted a Taper; made me a Sign to follow him; opened a Trap-Door, whereof I had never before been aware; it being contrived so as to be imperceptible, within the Thickness of the Wall; and led me down a little Pair of Stairs: This done, he carried me through divers intricate Turnings, which brought us into a Laboratory, furnished with all Manner of Instruments, that are necessary for Chymical Operations.

Being arrived there, *Rametzi* opened a second Trap-Door, contrived as imperceptibly as the former, and showed me two Barrels full of Gold-Dust, which amounted to an immense Value: Thou seest this Treasure, said he; half of it is more than sufficient to render thy Life perfectly easy and happy; I give it thee, O *Bigand*! and I do not think, that, in so doing, I over-pay thee; the other Half I reserve for myself; that I may no longer be obliged to have Recourse to my Secrets. Not content with this, pursued he, I make thee a Present also of this House, and all that is contained therein; and, in order to prevent

vent all Trouble upon this Head, I will go directly ; and assign it over to thee, by a Deed of Gift, in Form ; that to the End thou mayest remain in peaceable Possession thereof.

These generous Promises were soon followed by the Performance of them ; for we hastened away forthwith to a Lawyer's, where the Writings were drawn, signed, sealed and delivered ; and from thence, my dear Benefactor conducted me to the Ecclesiastic, of whom he had made mention to me, and desired him to take me into his Protection ; having previously secured him in my Interest, by the Present of a large Sum to the Poor ; and by promising him, that, at the same Time that I became his Successor in his Substance, I should also become so, in his annual Donatives, for charitable Uses. In effect, I engaged to set a-part yearly, a Sum equivalent thereto, for the same laudable Purpose ; and the good Priest, comforted for the Loss of *Rametzi*, by my Promises, congratulated me on the Piety of my Sentiments ; exhorted me to persevere in following the excellent Example of my worthy Predecessor ; represented to me of how great Weight it was in the Eye of Heaven ; and, after a very pathetic Discourse upon this Head, dismissed us, equally edified by his pious Conversation, and his Disinterestedness of Soul.

After all these Points were thus regulated, and *Rametzi* had taken Order, about having what he had reserved, for his own Use, conveyed safely to him ; we returned back to his Habitation (which I shall call mine for the future) where we found the lovely *Likinda*, who had got thither before us ; it having been agreed she should meet us there ; and she having been furnished, by *Rametzi*, with a Key, to let herself in, in Case we

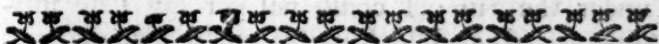
should be gone out. She was soon convinced, by substantial Proofs, that, notwithstanding her Absence, she had reigned without the least interruption, in her Lover's Heart ; the Sight of her Picture, with the Account of *Rametzi's* Course of Life, since their fatal Separation, left her no Room to doubt of this Truth ; upon which this tender Couple vowed a Thousand Times, that their Happiness was unparalleled.

Next Morning, by Day-Break, the Post-Chaise being ready, we took our Leave of each other ; and notwithstanding the great Reason, I had to be comforted (though it may not readily be believed, after the Account I have given of myself) I was touched with a lively Grief, at this Parting ; and it was not without a Flood of Tears, that I received the last Embraces of *Rametzi* : Accordingly, he was sensibly affected therewith, and promised with a hearty Sincerity, never to forget me. The beauteous *Likinda*, did me the Honour to say as much ; adding, that she hoped, one Day, to see me at *Venice* ; and assuring me, that, whatever happened, she would never be unmindful, of the great Obligations she had to me.

I was so thoroughly moved, with these repeated Proofs, of the most sincere Gratitude, and Friendship, that I could hardly make a suitable Return thereto : At last, they got into the Chaise, and drove away ; and I stood still, looking after them, 'till they were quite out of Sight ; after which, I went back into my House, it being then too early, to go any where else.

Being thus left alone, I was so struck with Astonishment, at so many extraordinary Events, that being scarcely able to stand, I threw myself down upon a Bed, where my Thoughts crowded
in

in thick upon me, and variously agitated my Mind: However, after mature Reflection, when I had well weighed all Circumstances, my Judgment, upon the whole, was, that the most consummate Happiness, unallayed by any of those gloomy Ills, which often cast a Damp, upon the most seemingly well-established Felicity, was reserved for me, for the future,



C H A P. VII.

Wherein Bigand's Riches consist. An Instance of a Son's being laudably disposed in Favour of his Father.

WHEN a Man never has been rich in his Days, nor in any Likelihood of being so, he cannot easily believe that he is become so; especially, when Fortune, by a most unaccountable and surprising Caprice, has plunged him (if I may use that Expression) in Affluence on a sudden; and showered down Plenty upon him, in a Manner out of the Clouds: In effect, just at this Juncture, I thought my last Adventure so very extraordinary, that it struck into my Head the Whole might be only one of those pleasing Dreams which vanish when we wake.

Possessed with this Imagination, I started up hastily, to see whether some illusive Fancy of an over-heated Brain had not actually flattered me with the Possession of a Fairy Treasure. In this fantastic Disposition of Mind I began to survey all the Apartments *Rametzi* had shewn me with the utmost Exactness; and found every where convincing Proofs of my unexpected good Fortune. In

one Place, divers Chests plentifully stored with the finest Linen, for all Sorts of Uses, agreeably entertained my Sight; in another, a noble Buffet advantageously set out with Abundance of Gold and Silver, and the scarcest and most beautiful China struck my Eyes; but the Wardrobe caused my Admiration more than all the Rest; being full of various Dresses for all the different Nations under the Sun; I could not for my Life imagine for what Use *Rametzi* could have designed them.

After having busied myself a while in viewing all these, I went into the Gallery wherein were divers handsome Apartments; and at one End of which was an exceeding fine Clock wrought with admirable Art, whose Value was considerably heightened by the great Variety of Astronomical Uses for which it served. The Room, however, wherein was *Likinda's* Picture, seemed to me the most magnificent in the whole House. The Number of stately Looking-Glasses wherewith it was filled, which reflected Objects back from one to the other, multiplied this Picture a thousand Times; and they were disposed so artfully, according to the nicest Rules of Opticks, that the Sight was only bounded by its own Weakness; which rendered this Apartment one of the most enchanting Places I ever saw in my Days.

I was just about to go out of this Terrestrial Paradise, when I cast my Eyes upon one of the Looking-Glasses, and perceived a little Key hanging thereto: This Observation made me examine the rest, and, I found, they had the same: I judged immediately they must belong to as many Cupboards, which were contrived within the Wall: It proved as I thought, and I had the Curiosity to open divers of them.

The

The First was filled with Papers, on the Sight of which I remembered *Rametzi* had desired me to set apart for him all those which should fall into my Hands, and accordingly I resolved not to fail complying therewith.

The Second contained divers Bags full of Gold and Silver in Specie.

The Third, a very curious and valuable Collection of Medals, placed in admirable Order.

The Fourth, a prodigious Quantity of Gold and Silver Toys, together with a great deal of Plate, of all Sorts, to a considerable Value.

The Fifth, a Kind of small Library, consisting of divers choice and inestimable Manuscripts, which *Rametzi* had likewise reserved for his own Use.

The Sixth, which, for the Worth of its Contents, I ought to have named the first, offered to my View a great Number of small Boxes, placed one upon another, which I had not the Patience to open, by Reason there were so many of them; but the first that came to Hand made me sensible of their immense Value; being full of all Sorts of Jewels for all Manner of Uses, as Rings, Buckles, Buttons, &c. set a hundred different Ways. On the Sight of this Treasure, it appeared to me so very inestimable, being rather fit for a Sovereign Prince, than any private Person, that, notwithstanding my dear and to-profusion-generous Benefactor had not made the least mention thereof to me, I fully determined within myself, to set aside the greatest Part of them; and have them transmitted to the matchless *Likinda*, as a Tribute worthy of her, and which she alone could possibly deserve.

The Sun-rising surprized me in this agreeable Employment of taking an Inventory of the Favours

vours which Fortune had so suddenly heaped upon me. I hurried over, therefore, my Survey of the Rest of the House ; having a secret Design in my Head which I was resolved to put in Execution, and the very Thought of which had made a lively Impression upon me. I was in such Haste to accomplish this, that I took but a slight View of a handsome Garden which joined to the House ; and whose high Walls prevented its being overlooked by any of the Neighbours. I walked therein but a few Minutes, considering within myself about the Manner how to effect my Scheme ; for, not being able any longer to withstand the inward Voice which reproached me with a criminal Oblivion of what most nearly concerned me, I hastened out precipitately. It is not always Riches which render a Man happy ; true Felicity depends wholly upon the Tranquillity of the Soul.

This criminal Oblivion, which caused me such Remorse, was my having 'till then forgotten the many Sorrows I had occasioned my ancient Father : How laudable were these Sentiments ! At the same Time that I blushed for my past Faults, I could not forbear congratulating myself on the Shame I felt, for having been so long without making the least Enquiry after those to whom I owed my Birth ; as also, upon the sincere Desire which was imprinted on my Heart, to compensate by the most substantial Proofs of Respect and Tenderness, for the little Regard I had, 'till then, had for them.

In vain would Love have opposed this, or disputed at least for the Preference ; natural Affection got the better thereof. But, will Riches make a Man honest, on a sudden, who has never before had any Regard to Reputation ? Why not ! Is it
not

not seen every Day, that Honours (as the common Proverb says) change Manners? Is it not possible that, by a lucky Chance, this Change may happen for the better? I am sure it is, and I am myself an undeniable Proof thereof.

I am afraid however, what I am going to say of myself will be imputed to Vanity: Don't we daily see Upstarts, who, in order to glory in a Fortune newly acquired, make a Parade of their Finery, in their own Country, and amongst their Relations? All this is very true; but, though it may be objected to them, that what Good they do to their Family is rather a Proof of their Ostentation than their honest Hearts, this shall not prevent my commending them. Why should People always view Things in the worst Light? I don't find it costs them any more, to look at them in the best; but what is it they will not carp at now-a-Days? Let us return from whence we have digressed.

I hired the first Hackney-Coach I met, and ordered the Man to drive me to the Street where my Father lived; I did not at all question finding him; it being at an Hour when he never failed being at Home; if nothing extraordinary had happened therefore, there was no Reason to fear missing him.

When I was arrived almost at the Door of the House, where I expected to have found him, I got out of the Coach, with Intent to have run and thrown myself at his Feet; but was prodigiously surprized to see the Face of every Thing changed; the Ground-Room being transformed into a Shoemaker's Shop, and every one of the Neighbours absolute Strangers to me.

I enquired, then, with some Concern of the Master of the Shop, what was become of the

Sieur

Sieur Bigand: The Man told me he had been confined several Months in Prison, for Debt; and that this Misfortune having ruined and dispersed the whole Family, his Wife had been forced to scower Pewter, his Daughter to go out to Service, and his youngest Son to black Shoes for a Livelihood. The honest Man added, that all the Hardships this poor, industrious and honest Family underwent, were brought upon them by their eldest Son, a good-for-nothing Rascal, who had robbed his Father of such a considerable Sum, that the Loss had quite broke his Back, so that he had never since been able to recover himself; and that the Trouble of these miserable Wretches were the more deplorable, as there was not the least Hope of their ever getting up again in the World; the Wife being often reduced to ask Alms for the Sustainance of her aged Husband, who was almost starved with Hunger, insomuch that it was enough to move Compassion in the hardest Breast.

This melancholy Story, for which I knew there was but too much Foundation (having actually robbed my Father of such a Sum, though, through Modesty, I did not before mention it) touched me to the very Quick, and forced Tears into my Eyes; I asked the Man, therefore, with a faltering Tongue, in what Gaol my Father was confined; which he having told me, I hastened again into the Coach. I had hardly got in, before the Tears which I had, till then, refrained, with much ado, gushed out again; and I was so greatly disordered, that I was obliged to make the Coachman stop some Minutes, to give me Time to compose myself. This done, I ordered him to drive to the Prison; with full Resolution, not only to deliver my Father from thence, but

but to pave the Way for my Pardon, by such substantial Proofs of sincere Repentance, and Affection, as might, in some Measure, deserve the Forgiveness, for which I intended to sue.



C H A P. VIII.

Bigand visits his Father in Gaol. The miserable Condition wherein he there finds him.

BEING arrived at the Prison, I immediately enquired for the *Sieur Bigand*; but in vain did I ask the Turnkeys for him by that Name; as my Father was friendless, and destitute of every Thing, he was no longer known to them, but by a Nick-name. I had Recourse, therefore, to the Head-Gaoler, as being the Person who ought to be the best informed; he looked over his Book, and told me, very civilly, because I was richly dressed, that the Man, after whom I enquired, was very much to be pitied, and in a very languishing Condition; especially within these few Days that his Wife had been sick; which had deprived him of what little Sustenance she used to procure for him under his Afflictions.

Hereupon, being sensibly moved, with this mournful Account, I begged the Gaoler, to let one of the Turnkeys shew me the Way to this miserable Object; Ah! Sir, cried he, interrupting me, it would be much better to make him come to you, if he has Strength enough to walk so far; it would make too deep an Impression upon a Gentleman, like you, to go into a Place, where he will find nothing, but the most melancholy and disagreeable Scenes of the deepest
Woe

Woe and Distress. No matter, Sir, no matter, answered I, with a Voice yet more and more affected, but striving to conceal it; such Sights are sometimes of great Service to a Person who is conversant in the World.

On my thus saying, a Turnkey was immediately ordered to shew me to him; who, leading me through a hundred dark Windings and Turnings, at last stopt at the Door of a Ward, which, had it not been for a little Light that came in at the Window, might more properly have been called a Dungeon; where about twenty poor Wretches were lying, higgledy-piggledy, upon Straw: See here, said he, in a Voice as rugged and disagreeable as the grating of his Iron Bolts, see here, yourself, whether the Man you enquire after is not amongst these.

Scarce had the Prisoners heard this, before they all raised themselves up, and gave a mournful Cry, which pierced me to the Heart: One alone, who was stretched out at his full Length, never stirred from his Place, or shewed the least Sign of his sympathizing with his Companions, in their Complaints.

I asked which was the *Sieur Bigand*; upon which all those, who had raised themselves up, lay down again in their former Posture; and only the poor Wretch, who did not stir before, lifting up his hoary Head, answered, with a Sigh, I am he; who wants me? Get up, and don't trouble yourself about the rest, cried the Turnkey, with a hoarse, stern, and haughty Voice; come hither, I say, and you shall be told presently.

My Father, my dear venerable Father, immediately obeyed; and, notwithstanding his Misery, and his long Beard, I knew him again directly; he approached me, then, though his
weak

weak Eyes could scarce bear the Magnificence of my Dress, and asked me, with a Voice, more broken by his Sorrow, than his Age ; whether he had the Honour to be known to me ? Twenty Times was I on the Point of betraying myself, and falling at his Feet ; I was sensibly affected with the Rigour of his Fate ; my Legs began to fail me ; and had it not been for the Wall, which supported me, I should have dropt down backwards.

I sighed, and had hardly Strength to speak ; however, I got the better of myself, as well as I could, and, pretending to be ignorant thereof, asked, how long he had been confined there, and on what Account ; it was impossible for me to say more, such an Oppression had I upon my Spirits. Hereupon, this dear Father, with Tears in his Eyes, told me the whole Story ; wherein my own Name was mentioned but too often, and that not to my Advantage ; it was high Time for it to draw to an End, for I could no longer hold out : Not knowing, therefore, what to do, I turned away abruptly, without looking at him ; but, assured him, he might take Courage, for I was going to labour for his Delivery ; which said, I went towards the Door. The Prisoners, then, ran after me, and begged something to drink my Health, as usual ; whereupon, I pulled out a Handful of Silver, which procured me a Thousand Prayers, and Blessings, from those miserable Objects.

I hastened back from thence to the Gaoler's, whither I was no sooner got, than I was taken very ill ; I told you so, Sir, cried he ; People, who are conversant in the World, are not used to meet with such melancholy Sights ; they are too contrary to their Customs : Having thus said, he gave me a Glass of Cordial, which revived me. I entered

tered then upon Business with him, asked, for what Sum the Prisoner was confined ? Five Hundred Livres, Sir, answered he, and the usual Charges ; when that is paid, he is discharged of Course. If that is the Case, resumed I, drawing out my Purse, he will not be long in this Place ; in the mean while, here are Four *Louis d'Ors*, to be distributed amongst his Companions, and as much for your Turnkeys ; I would have them all drink the Prisoner's Health, and rejoice at his Deliverance ; as for yourself, Sir, continued I, it is not fit, to deal with you in the same Manner ; you deserve a quite different Treatment.

This Compliment, and this Generosity, to which the Goaler had never before been used, rendered him yet more obliging than ever, and more officious to serve me. As a Proof thereof, he told me, since I concerned myself for the Welfare of the poor Prisoner, he would advise me to defer his Enlargement till next Day ; for Fear the excessive Transports, of so sudden, and so unexpected a Discharge, should over-power him, and occasion his Death.

He added, that it would be necessary, to prepare him for his Liberty, by dieting him, and giving him Viſuals by little and little, to the End that, when he came where he might eat his Fill, he might not be too voracious, and either overcharge his Stomach, or suffocate himself. I thought it entirely proper, to be ruled by him in this Point, as he had most Experience in such Cases ; wherefore, I took my Leave ; recommended the dear Prisoner particularly to his Care ; and got again into the Coach, with a Mind agreeably relieved, from the Oppression I before felt, by the good Action, I had just done. The Transports, whereof the Soul is sensible, after

ter Well-doing, is a Kind of Fore-runner, and Anticipation, of its future Reward and Happiness.



C H A P. IX.

The Scruples of Lusinette. Bigand greatly alarmed, on being surprized by the Embassador. What a dangerous Employment he is put upon, by his Excellency.

WE can never give ourselves up to Pleasure, with such a Gust, as when we are disengaged from every Tie of Duty; accordingly, scarce had I complied with the Dictates of natural Affection, before the Idea of *Lusinette*, returning to my Imagination, with redoubled Charms, I flew from the Prison to visit that dear Object of my Desires. The Landlady was just coming down from her, as I was at the Bottom of the Stairs, and seemed overjoyed at the Sight of me; go, said she, you are a naughty Man, you put your Sister into terrible Frights; she has not dined yet, poor Lamb! One may see plainly, you are turned a down-right Town Spark, you begin to keep fine Hours.

I made her no Manner of Answer, but flew directly to *Lusinette*, and in Spite of her Reservedness, could perceive easily by her Eyes, how welcome my Visit was to her. I enquired then, with some Eagerness after her Health, as also whether Care had been taken, according to my Desire, to prevent even her Wishes: She assured me, she had all the Reason in the World, to be satisfied with her Landlady's Behaviour; and should even think herself very happy were not

such a Way of Life inconsistent with the Rules of Decency: But added, that, as all she had to depend on was her Virtue, and the Satisfaction, of having never swerved from its Precepts; she begged me very seriously, either to give her a positive Answer, about her going into a Convent, as she had proposed to me, or at least, to get somebody to look out for a Service for her; assuring me, she would much rather choose to wait upon a Lady, than be exposed to the Danger of being suspected guilty of a criminal Correspondence.

My dear *Lusnette's* persevering, in this Manner, in such a virtuous and laudable Resolution, did not in the least displease me; on the contrary, it forwarded the secret Design my Heart had formed in her Favour. I was desirous, however, to dissuade her from it, but it was in vain; and, I was obliged, in order to satisfy her, to promise, I would come to a Determination, one Way or t'other, the very next Day. For which will you declare, for the Convent, cried that charming Creature, looking earnestly at me? Nay, now you are very ill-natured, answered I, in a little Pet; you must certainly have a great Mind, never to see me more, by your insisting so on going from hence. Good Heavens! How much you wrong me, pursued *Lusnette*! Could you but read my Thoughts, you would not thus reproach me! Why, how should I surmise any Thing from thence, in my Favour, resumed I eagerly? Ah! no more of that, Sir, rejoined *Lusnette*, giving me an arch Look, I am very much afraid, you have understood me but too well.

I was about to carry on the Conversation farther upon this Head; but Dinner being brought in, *Lusnette* was so malicious, to detain the
Landlady

Landlady, on Pretence of being obliged to her, for her good Usage ; that she might give me no Opportunity to renew the Discourse. I sat down at Table, therefore, with a little Dissatisfaction in my Looks ; which the Gaiety of that lovely Prater soon dispelled : The Mistress of the House was not long, before she also was in a merry Strain ; she had been handsome in her younger Days, and had still some Traces of a good Face remaining ; but we seldom judge impartially of ourselves ; accordingly, I could find by her Talk, she did not yet think herself at her last Prayers.

After Dinner, *Lusnette* and I went to the Window, whilst the Cloth was taking away ; and, being then more agitated than ever, by my Love for that charming Maiden, I was endeavouring to sift out, by my Discourse, whether I might reasonably judge myself to be in her Favour ; but she interrupted me in my Design, by making me take Notice, that a Coach had just stopt at the Door, wherein was a Gentleman of a most engaging Aspect, who had his Eyes attentively fixed upon me. My Mind was then so intent, upon what I was saying, that I had not in the least observed the Arrival of the Coach ; but, no sooner had I looked that Way, than I was seized with a Trembling from Head to Foot ; for it was the Embassador : And I was sensible he knew me, by a Sign he made to me, though I was so much disordered just then, that I could not tell, what he meant thereby.

In effect, I stood still at the Window, like a Statue ; so that *Lusnette*, who had taken Notice of my Confusion, asked me with some Concern, what was the Matter with me ? I was just going to answer her, when one of the Footmen knock-

ed at the Door ; and Word was brought me, the Moment after, that Monsieur *de*—— was below in his Coach, and wanted to speak with me ; upon which, I just bowed to *Lusnette*, and hastened away to his Excellency.

As soon as I approached the Coach-Door, the Embassador ordered it to be opened, and made me place myself by him ; after which, I am overjoyed, said he, that Chance has thrown you in my Way ; I have sent every where in Search of you, these two Days, and No-body has been able to give the least Intelligence of you : Where do you hide yourself ? And what are you doing ? Having by then had Time to recover myself, I set a good Face upon the Matter, and assured his Excellency, I did not neglect his Business, one Moment ; but had provided the rich Dress, I then wore, on Purpose to have Admittance every where ; that I had even got Scent of the Chevalier *de Rocfer*, after whom I had, ever since, made diligent Enquiry, underhand ; and did not doubt, giving him a good Account of that Gentleman, in a little while.

This is all mighty well, resumed the Embassador, with an Aspect more serene, than when he first accosted me ; but you must be expeditious ; for, I have received certain Advice, that he is hatching some Mischief ; the President, Father to the young Lady in Question, having given me Notice, that he surprized his Daughter, writing a Letter to her Lover, whereby he judged, a secret Correspondence was carried on between them, and some Design ready to break out ; that he had not been able however to get at the Bottom of any Thing, so much were they upon their Guard ; but he did not doubt, some of his Family were gained over, and favoured the Intrigue :

trigue: He added, that, for Fear of taking any Steps to no Purpose, and thereby alarming them, he had kept this Discovery to himself, 'till he had asked my Advice, how he should behave, on this Occasion.

I told him, pursued his Excellency, I knew no better Way, than to set a Watch about the House at Night; there being no Likelihood, they would attempt any Thing, in the Day-Time; and you was the Man, *Bigand*, upon whom I pitched for that Purpose; which was the Reason of my sending every where in Search of you. Since I have again found you, continued he, you must lie perdué there this very Night; and give over every other Enterprize, even supposing you should make any Discovery; and if even any one either enters, or comes out of the President's House, you must lay hold on him; to this End a Body of Watchmen shall have Orders, not to stir from about the Neighbourhood; and, supposing you should have any need of them, you will find them within twenty Yards of the President's, in the Street *de—*, under a Farrier's Shed, over-against a Tavern: The Word shall be *Saint Lewis and Bezancon*, don't forget it, it will make them obey you.

I promised the Embassador, his Orders should be punctually observed; notwithstanding, which he was going, perhaps, to ask me some farther Questions which might have puzzled me, when I was fortunately delivered, by the Attorney-General; who happening to pass by, and see his Excellency, sent to desire a Word with him. I took Advantage of this lucky Opportunity to withdraw; and the Embassador's Coach driving off, I hastened up again to *Lusnette*, who having recollected his Excellency, was no longer surpris-

zed at his having sent for me; but, as for the Landlady, she was prodigiously astonished, and imagined, I must necessarily be a Person of great Distinction, since one of Monsieur de _____'s Rank treated me in such a familiar Manner.

I spent the rest of the Day, with the charming *Lusnette*; and had no Reason to be dissatisfied, with the Conversation, which I renewed with her; for I found plainly, though she would not directly confess, that she had an Affection for me, I might flatter myself with the Thoughts, of not being altogether indifferent to her. This induced me to endeavour, to make an End, as soon as possible, of the Affair I had undertaken; that I might afterwards enjoy in Peace the plentiful Fortune, with which Providence had blessed me.

I don't in the least question, but many People will blame me, for this Part of my Conduct; neither do I pretend entirely to justify it; and I can easily imagine all they will say upon this Head? Why would you run the Hazard of new Adventures, cry they; Could you ever meet with any more fortunate, than what has already befallen you? What more could such a-one as you hope for, or expect? A noble House; Plate and Jewels to an immense Sum; together with an almost inexhaustible Treasure? what could you want besides?

It must be confessed, nothing can be more reasonable than these Observations; but, at the same Time, nothing could have been more imprudent, than such a Behaviour: Had I left the Ambassador's, without giving substantial Reasons for my so doing, what would have been the Consequence of it? His Excellency, provoked at such a sudden and precipitate Departure, would certainly have
examined

examined into the Cause thereof; and what would he have thought, of the prodigious Alteration in my Circumstances? Should I have enjoyed in Peace, a Fortune, acquired in so extraordinary a Manner?

I believe these few Words are sufficient, to justify my Foresight on this Occasion; it is true, this Enterprize was very near costing me my Life; but, then, it has procured me the peaceable, and quiet Enjoyment, of the Favours of Providence, ever since: And Dangers ought not to frighten us, when there is no Room to doubt, of their bringing us to the End of our Wishes.

One considerable Advantage, at least, I derived from this Undertaking; that enterprizing and inquisitive Temper, which was born with me, as has been seen in the former Part of my Story, could not have failed of proving fatal to me, one Time or other; my last Adventure cured me of that pernicious Itch, of intermeddling with other People's Affairs; ought I not, therefore, to be reconciled to all the Sufferings it brought upon me? Experience convinces me still, every Day, that no greater Happiness can befall us, than that of reforming ourselves.



C H A P. X.

Bigand lies upon the Watch about the President's House. He seizes upon the young Lady's Tutor, by Mistake, instead of De Rocfer. Is brought into a terrible Premunire. How he comes off. A lively Picture of Hypocrisy.

AS soon as I had supped, I took Leave of my dear *Lusnette*, and hastened Home, where I changed my Cloaths; those I had on drawing the Eye too much, and being, consequently, quite unfit for the Business upon which I was going. I took Care, also, to provide myself with a Pair of Pistols; and, being thus prepared against all that could happen, went directly to the Street where the President lived, with a firm Resolution to watch so narrowly about the Neighbourhood, that not a Dog should pass unobserved.

Above two Hours did I listen with the utmost Attention, and keep a strict Eye upon every Thing that stirred, without finding the least Reason to believe the Embassador's Intelligence well-grounded. Being wearied out, therefore, with such a tedious Expectation, I was just beginning to nod upon a Bench, when the Smack of a Whip, and the Trampling of Horses, made me start out of my Sleep, and prick up my Ears with all imaginable Earnestness. On drawing near the House, however, and looking about every where, I could not discern any Thing which could have occasioned the Noise I had heard; I turned down the Corner of the Street, therefore,

therefore, and was not long before I found sufficient Room to be alarmed thereat.

As I was creeping along close by the Wall, that I might be the better able to distinguish Objects, a Dunghill, over which I was near falling, made me judge that the President's Stables were in that Street, and the Intrigue was carried on that Way; in effect, I was not mistaken in my Conjectures.

The Noise I had heard proceeded from a Chaise, to which the Horses were already put, and which was just upon the Point of driving away; I was pretty much perplexed, therefore, what to do on this Occasion; whatever was the Design, or whoever appeared, I had Orders to seize upon them; and I was apprehensive, that whilst I quitted my Post to fetch the Watch, who were in a neighbouring Street, the Chaise might be gone another Way. Chance, however, which had always been propitious to me, favoured me also at this Juncture; a lighted Pipe, whereof I had a Glimpse, at the Corner of the Street, made me judge I was not the only one who was there standing Centinel; I went up, therefore, directly to the Person who was smoaking, and easily found it was one of the Watch. As soon as he heard me, he called out in a low Voice, who goes there? I answered immediately *Saint Lewis and Bezancon*; whereupon he came up to me, and told me his Comrades were not above four Steps off, and would be with me at the first Whistle: Upon this, I ordered him to put out his Pipe, which might discover him, and be in Readiness with his Companions at the Corner of that Street; for, according to all Appearance, I should soon have Occasion for them.

Scarce

Scarce had I got back again to the Place where I stood before, when I saw a Man come out, leading a Woman, whom having first helped into the Chaise, he then got into it himself also. I did not stir, however, 'till the Chaise began to move, when I gave a Whistle, which brought the Watch to me in a Moment: I ordered them to follow me with all Speed, and get before the Horses, as soon as the Chaise was without the Town, after which I would take Care of the Rest. I have forgot to observe that his Excellency had enjoined me, above all Things, in case I should proceed to Extremities, to manage Matters so as to avoid causing any Alarm; which was the only Reason of my forbearing to seize them at the very first.

Scarce had we overtaken the Chaise without the Gates, when the Watch formed a Ring about it, and stopped it; upon which, I leaped into it, and seized upon the Man, whose being in the Habit of an Abbot surprized me very much, and his Cowardice amazed me yet more. It was what I could never have expected, after what I had heard and seen of the brave *Chevalier de Rocfer*; for he gave a loud Cry, and was so frightened, that he suffered me to lay hold on him as quietly as a Lamb.

Having thus dispatched this Point, I delivered him into the Hands of the Watch; and, as I have always been of a mistrustful Temper, gave them a strict Charge (in order to prevent any Surprise) to go all of them with him to the nearest Prison, and there wait for new Instructions, being myself alone sufficiently able to take Care of all that remained to be done. Having thus provided against the worst, I ordered the Postillion to turn about, and hasten back to the Place from whence he

he came; but the poor Boy, who took us for Thieves, and was frightened out of his Wits, instead of doing as he was bid, fell upon his Knees, and begged me to spare his Life; in effect, it was with the utmost Difficulty that I dispelled his Fears in some Measure, and prevailed on him to move: At last, however, by Abundance of Protestations that I had no Design to kill him, he got again on Horseback, and trotted away towards the President's.

I had placed myself in the Chaise by the Lady's Side, where I had not been long, before I perceived her to have lost her Senses; I did my utmost to recover her; but her Fears had made so strong an Impression on her, that all my Efforts for that Purpose were in vain: I urged the Postillion, therefore, to put on faster, in Hopes that either the quick Motion of the Chaise, and the Air I gave her would fetch her again to Life; or, that by our Arrival the sooner at our Journey's End, she might obtain the more speedy Relief.

Scarce had the Chaise stopt at the Gate from whence it set out, than a Man appeared, who cried to the Postillion, you have been admirably expeditious, my Lad, we did not expect you back so quickly: What Answer the Boy gave, or what Sign he made, I know not, but the Unknown hastened in again, and shut the Gate after him. Hereupon I asked the Postillion, who that Man was, and what he meant, by what he had said; but it was impossible to get a Word out of him; and the Condition wherein the Lady (whom I took all the while for the President's Daughter) still continued, made me pass over this his obstinate Silence.

In

In order, then, to get Relief for her, and for fear a longer Delay should prove dangerous, I thundered at the Gate as loud as I was able; but I knocked some Time, before I could obtain any Answer: At last, Somebody asked in an angry Tone, who was there, and what I wanted at such an unreasonable Hour? My Reply was, to bid him open the Gate quickly, and call up the President for Business of Importance which would not admit of any Delay: However, a considerable Time past in disputing, during which the Lady continued still in her Swoon, and it was not without many Oaths that I would complain to his Master, that I prevailed on the Man, at last, to go and call him.

At length, a Light appeared at this Gate at which it was more difficult to get Admittance, than at that of a Fortrefs in Time of War; and soon after, the Hinges of the two Folding Doors began to creak, and the Gate flew open. A Man about fifty, in a Night-Gown, whom I judged to be the President, by the Respect that was shewn him, came forward, and asked me in a very rough Tone, what so very urgent Business I had, to cause him to be disturbed in such a Manner? Hereupon I went up to him, with my Hat in my Hand, and was about to give him an Account of my Proceedings; but, pushing me back again, without vouchsafing to hear me, and fixing his Eyes upon the Chaise, he demanded what was the Meaning of its being at his Gate at such an Hour.

It was brought back hither by me, Sir, cried I, without being at all daunted; and having thus premised, I added, in a Voice somewhat lower, that I had again recovered *Mademoiselle*, his Daughter, whom the *Chevalier de Rocfer* was
on

on the Point of carrying off. What dost thou say, thou Rascal, returned the President, looking at me with an haughty Air? That you must have *Mademoiselle*, your Daughter, taken down out of the Chaise without Delay, Sir, cried I; she has been in a Swoon a great While, and not a Moment ought to be lost, before she has some Relief. Very fine! pursued the angry Magistrate, I don't understand one Word of all this Varlet says, he makes me mad; my Daughter is within, under Lock and Key, and, nevertheless, he pretends he has got her here.——But, what do I see, continues he, being now close by the Chaise, my Niece! Good Heavens! am I awake or asleep? What my Niece! the very Pattern of Holiness! a perfect Saint!——Does she ramble abroad, at such unseasonable Hours! No, I am certainly out of my Senses; and I believe the Devil has a Hand in all this!

At any other Time, I should not have been able to have forborn laughing at the President's Passion; but I was then so much surprized myself at what had passed, that I only stared about me, quite amazed, 'till it should please Chance to unravel this Mystery: Nor was I the only one who was astonished; the whole Company were equally surprized, insomuch that the Niece was carried in, without one Word's being spoken, all of us keeping our Eyes fixed upon the President.

For some Minutes, he seemed in a Manner motionless, and revolving divers Things in his Mind, at last, seizing me on a sudden by the Collar; what hast thou been saying, cried he? What wast thou about to tell me? What Business hadst thou here? and how camest thou to be concerned in what has just happened? Speak quickly, other-

wise I shall find the Way to force the Truth from thee.

I was just going to answer the President, and give him an Account of all that had past; as also to tell him, what Share I had in the Affair, and what Instructions had been given me; when the Postillion whom I had frightened so terribly, and who was, at length, come to himself, cried out, that he alone was to be believed; that he had got the Chaise ready by the express Order of the Tutor; but that, for my Part, I was a Robber, who had set upon him with Design to kill him, about a Musket-Shot from the City-Gates; and it was only by a Miracle he had escaped.

On the Boy's thus saying, every one had his Eyes fixed upon me; and, as Fortune would have it, another Body of the Watch passing by at the same Instant, and not only hearing a Noise, but seeing a great Light, and catching hold on what the Postillion had averred, ran up to me, and laid Hands on me, as a Prey lawfully belonging to them. The President then telling who he was, gave Orders to let me come in, but not to lose Sight of me, being resolved, he said, to examine me himself.

These Words were no sooner out of his Mouth, than they dragged me into a Court-Yard, where they bound me like a Malefactor; after which, they proceeded to search my Pockets, where finding the Pistols, which agreed perfectly well with what the Postillion had declared, I was try'd and cast in an Instant; and there was not one of the Servants who did not condemn me, at least, to be broken upon the Wheel. In effect, this Interval, as may be well judged, was not one of the most agreeable in my Life; nevertheless, it was

was but a slight Fore-runner of what was soon to befall me.

I was exposed for near an Hour to the Curses and Invectives of the Domesticks, after the Departure of the President ; whom his Niece, being at last recovered from her Swoon, had desired to favour her with his Company. I was a Stranger to what passed in this Interview ; but it was scarce over, before Orders were given to conduct me into the Closet of the Magistrate, who was there waiting for me in an easy Chair. As soon as he set Eyes on me, he bid every one withdraw, and leave us together ; after which, well, young Man, said he, art thou disposed to tell me the Truth ? Thou art not yet in the Judge's Hands ; I am Master of thy Destiny ; no Subterfuges or Evasions ; thou hast seemed to me too deeply concerned in this Affair, not to be perfectly well acquainted with all the Particulars thereof ; thou namedst a Man to me whom I have good Reason not to love ; dost thou belong to him ? And my Daughter is not to be found ; whether has she been conveyed ? Be advised by me, Friend, and think not to get away from me by inventing Lies ; thou art too well apprized of the Duties of my Office, not to know, that it is the Business of a Judge to distinguish Truth from Falshood ; I forewarn thee of this, that thou may'st not take Abundance of Pains to no Purpose, by endeavouring to impose upon me.

As soon as I was left alone with the President, I did not in the least question, that I should quickly bring him off, from his unreasonable Prejudice against me : In effect, scarce had I mentioned the Embassador's Name, and some of the Circumstances, relating to Mademoiselle, his Daughter, and her terrible Lover, before he interrupted me,

and begged me to forget the ill Usage I had just received ; acknowledging, that far from having deserved it, he was already greatly obliged to me, for what I had already begun to do for him, in bringing back his Niece.

But, my Daughter, *Monf. Bigand*, continued he, what is become of her ? And what Course must we take to recover her from the formidable *Chevalier de Rocfer* ? That will be a very difficult Matter, Sir, said I, if he has actually carried her off ; for, no Doubt, they have concerted their Measures but too well : However, Sir, resumed I, I don't believe they have yet got away, if you are well assured, she was not gone before Night. Ah ! I will be answerable for that, rejoined the President, for I saw her, before I went to Bed ; and I hope that is sufficient.

Certainly, Sir, said I ; but, neither is my Opinion to be rejected, for two Reasons ; the one is, I have never stirred from the Neighbourhood of your House, since Ten this Evening ; and not a Soul has come out, except those I seized ; the other is, I remember, when I brought back your Niece, a Man popped out, who, little dreaming, no Doubt, of what had happened, hastened into the House again, with Precipitation, having, I suppose, observed some Circumstances, which did not seem favourable to him. This sudden retiring, I believe conceals some Mystery ; and, if *Mademoiselle D——* is got away, it can only have been during the Time, that the Watch laid hold on me.

Oh ! if that is the Case, I will be answerable for the contrary, cried the President, interrupting me ; as I will also for the great Gates, and the Door of the Stables, which have been strictly guarded ever since your Arrival ; and there are
only

only those two Ways, of getting out of the House. Since it is so, Sir, pursued I, you may make yourself easy ; for Mademoiselle, your Daughter, is, undoubtedly, concealed in some Corner of the House, and the Man, who would have slipped away, was certainly her Lover.

I begin to be of your Opinion, replied the Magistrate ; I even see some Conformity between what you suggest, and what my unworthy Niece has told me ; but, supposing you should be right, what Course shall we take, in so ticklish an Affair ? The best Way, I believe, Sir, will be, to examine Mademoiselle your Niece again ; it will be in vain to sift the Postillion, or any other of your Family ; she alone must be privy to the whole Mystery. During this Enquiry, pursuant to which we will concert our Measures, the Gates must be kept shut, and well-guarded, and the Watch detained, that they may be in Readiness, in Case of Necessity.

Having thus consulted, the President called in the Company ; caused me to be unbound, to the great Astonishment of the Watch, and all his Family ; and conducted me to his Niece's Chamber. She was, then, in Bed, and rather dead than alive ; nor could I discover, whether the Colour, that over-spread her Face, was the Effect of her Shame and Confusion, or of her deadly Vexation, for having been prevented, in the Execution of her criminal Designs.

All the Inferences I could draw, from the Enquiry then made, when reconciled with what the President himself had told me, as we were going out of his Closet, were, that his precious Niece was an artful and politick young Gentlewoman ; who, under the Mask of a pretended Devotion, had found the Way to impose upon the Family,

and be entirely at her own Liberty : I could perceive also that, under the Cloak of a seeming Modesty, she had kept from the Observation of the Publick, a Heart prone to Love, and burning with amorous Desires.

Such as I have here described her she had suffered herself to be taken, with a young Fellow, who was as great a Dissembler, as she was an Hypocrite ; and, who, like too many in the World, pretended to direct others, without being able to govern himself ; this was the Tutor : He had begun by making fine Speeches, and waited, no Doubt, a favourable Opportunity, to receive the Reward thereof, in an advantageous Match:

The President's Resentment against his Daughter, was the first Circumstance which seemed to favour the Views of these Lovers ; and the rigorous Treatment of that young Lady, on Account of the *Chevalier de Rocfer*, together with her close Confinement, the Despair of her Gallant, and the Confidence the Uncle reposed in the Niece, forwarded them yet more ; in short, all these Incidents gave Birth to a double Plot ; inspiring the former with the Resolution to make her Escape by Flight from the Hardships she lay under ; and the latter with that of justifying herself, by her Cousin's Example, for throwing herself away, by a disproportionable Marriage.

The Case, however, was by no Means alike ; the Tutor was of a mean Extraction, and there was no Chance which could ever render him a suitable Match for the Niece ; whereas it was not so with the *Chevalier de Rocfer*, he was of a Family of great Distinction ; and there were no other Objections against him, but Abundance of disagreeable Adventures, and the Aversion of his Mistress's Father : This, it must be confessed,

was

was a great deal ; but it did not quite take away all Hope of seeing his Marriage with the President's Daughter, one Day, approved of and ratified.

To return from whence I have digressed. The Niece's formal Outside had so long imposed upon the Family ; her seeming Modesty in all her Actions ; her Eyes always cast down at the Approach of a Man ; her strict Devotion which would not let her omit any one religious Duty, and her Conversation constantly dictated by the most rigid Virtue ; all this Grimace, I say, had so far blinded the Eyes of the Uncle, that when he took the Resolution to keep his Daughter under Lock and Key, he would not intrust her in the Custody of any one, but so sanctified a Person.

The two Cousins being then in just the same Case, acquainted each other with their most hidden Thoughts ; the Tutor was next called to join in the Consultation, and the Chevalier *de Rocfer* was afterwards admitted to make one at their Conferences. In short, it was at last resolved to redress all Grievances by Flight ; and that when they were all gone away, they would all four unite themselves by the Nuptial Tie ; which done, they would afterwards endeavour, whilst at a Distance, to make their Peace, and obtain the Ratification of their Marriages, which, as they would then have been already consummated, it would have been too late to think of preventing.

All Things having been thus agreed on, the Tutor, in whom the President reposed Abundance of Confidence, for the same Reasons as he did in his Niece, took upon himself the Care of providing for their Escape : In order to this, besides his Tutor's Place, he had, a little before, very
politically,

politickly, obtained that of Gentleman of the Horse to the President, which rendered him absolute Master of the Stables. This material Point being gained, that Day, or, to speak more properly, that Night, when I was placed Centinel, so unfortunately for him, had been pitched upon for the Execution of their long projected Scheme, when the haughty Preceptor insisted on setting out first, as being entitled thereto, by Virtue of his Office. The Chaise was to have carried him and the Niece to a Country-Seat of the President's, about three Miles out of Town; and having lodged them in Safety there, was to have returned, and fetched the Daughter and the *Chevalier de Rocfer*; Post-Horses having been there provided, to convey them all directly to *Holland*.

Thus had they concerted their Measures, tho' they had sufficient Leisure and Opportunity to have ordered them better; but Prudence seldom accompanies ill Designs: Vice blinds our Eyes; it puts our Senses in a Hurry, and we don't see the wretched Fate it is about to bring upon us, till the Hand of Remorse has taken away the fatal Muffler with which we were hood-wink'd.

The Account given us by the Niece of Part of these Circumstances, whilst she shed a Flood of Tears, and implored her Uncle's Pardon, helped to confirm me in my Conjecture, that they had not yet made their Escape: Wherefore, I assured the President, if the *Chevalier de Rocfer* fell in my Way, I would undertake to seize him. I had this Affair very much at Heart, and the more Difficulties I foresaw therein, the more was I resolved upon succeeding in it.

The President, prepossessed with the Opinion of the Gallant's unparalleled Intrepidity and Vigour,

gour, and being, perhaps, a little in dread of him, with Pleasure saw me take this Business upon myself; and the Officer who commanded the Watch, being, perchance, yet a greater Coward, on my proposing to him to second me, assured me as a Person who understood his Duty on such Occasions to a Nicety, it was absolutely necessary for him not to stir from his Men, that he might be the better able, to assist me seasonably. Notwithstanding this Excuse, I was not at a Loss, to discover his real Motives; however, I suffered him to do as he pleased, rightly judging, he would be of no great Service to me, were he to be with me.

Having caused my Arms, then to be again delivered to me, I began my Search alone; and there was not a Nook nor Corner in the House which I did not carefully view; nor any Hole, where a Person could have hid himself, into which I did not peep. All my Labour, however, was in vain; and as no Place, remained but the Cockloft, and I had examined that pretty narrowly, I began to despair of succeeding in my Enterprize, when Chance directed my Eyes to an Oval Window, or Sky-Light, in the Roof, against which a Ladder had been left standing, through Forgetfulness. On observing this, I did not in the least doubt, but the *Chevalier de Rocfer*, and *Mademoiselle de M—*, had got out there for Refuge. The Uproar, that had been made in the House, for above two Hours, rendered it impossible for them not to know, they were the Persons sought after; it was, therefore, very reasonable to believe, they had concealed themselves wherever they could.

This Thought re-called to my Remembrance, that the Roof of a House had formerly served to
shelter

shelter me, on a like Occasion ; and I could not help feeling some Regret at going to do, then, by another, what I should, at that Juncture, have been heartily unwilling to have had done by me. As I went up the Ladder, I observed, the Slatting was broken in divers Places, which seemed a certain Proof, that I was right in my Conjecture ; I desired the President, therefore, to order the Watch, to keep a good Guard at the Window, and told him, I hoped, he would not see me again, but with his Man seized. Hereupon, as angry as the Magistrate was with his Daughter, he begged me several Times, in Case I met her, to manage so as not to fright her ; I promised to avoid it as much as possible ; desired Silence might be kept ; and having invoked the Protection of Heaven, got out upon the House-Top.



C H A P. XI.

A terrible Combat between Bigand and the Chevalier de Rocfer, upon the Roof of the President's House. Bigand's Life saved only by a Miracle.

THE Shades of Night disappearing by little and little, gave Way insensibly to Break of Day, and afforded by Degrees a Glimpse of the rosy Morning, when, being just upon the Point of undertaking a most desperate Adventure, I was very willing to view the Field of Battle, whereon I was to engage : I must confess it struck me with some Terror ; the Steepness of the Roof, with the Slipperiness of the Slates, and the great Height

Height of the House, presented to my View, twenty Deaths instead of one. I thought therefore, it would be very unadvised and imprudent, to stand on so dangerous an Occasion, upon a scrupulous Observation of the Point of Honour; and, accordingly, I pulled off my Shoes, that I might have the Advantage of being able to keep my Footing upon the Slates: This done, I lay down flat upon my Belly, with my Pistols ready cocked, and listened attentively; being fully persuaded that if the Chevalier *de Rocfer* was upon the Roof, no longer hearing any Noise, he would soon endeavour to find some Means to get away from so dangerous a Place of Refuge; besides, Morning came on apace, and it was not at all likely, that he would stay there, 'till it was broad Day-Light.

Above two Hours had I hearkened, with all the Ears I had, before the least Noise gave me any Reason to imagine my Conjectures were well-grounded; and I began to think that the Chevalier had got off; and perhaps, upon the Strength of this Belief, should soon have come to a Resolution, and given over my lying in wait for him, when the Sound of a Woman's Tongue, not far from me, diverted me from it. Good Heavens! what will now become of us, cried the Voice? I am ready to die with Fear! Be easy, said the Chevalier (for I soon found he was the Man I had to deal with) they will quickly be weary of their fruitless Search; the worst is already over; every one is withdrawn; and the Lights are all out: Stay you, therefore, where you are, whilst I go upon the Scout; as soon as I find, we can get away securely, I will come and fetch you; and take no Care about the Rest; but leave it all to me

Notwithstanding

Notwithstanding these fair Promises, which convinced me the Lady was *Mademoiselle de M—*, she did not seem well pacified therewith; and it was not without the utmost Anxiety, that she yielded to the Remonstrances of her Lover; but he shewed her so plainly the Necessity of coming to some Determination, that she at last submitted and consented to whatever he pleased.

Matters being thus agreed, I saw the formidable Adversary, with whom I was to cope, appear from a Chimney; upon which I rose up with as much Precaution as possible, and was going to place myself close to another, that I might be able securely to seize him, whilst he was stooping to get in at the Window; but a cursed Slate upon which I trod happening to crack, the Noise made the Chevalier stretch out his Head, and discover me. Instead, however, of being terrified at a Sight which one would have thought should have startled him, he advanced towards me undauntedly, Pistol in Hand; whereupon, rightly judging there was then no going back, I waited for him resolutely, without stirring, and with my Arms likewise in Readiness.

My Antagonist being come, by this Time, within four Paces of me, asked me fiercely, with a threatening Air, what was my Intent; and bid me begone quickly another Way, or he would shoot me through the Head. I made no other Answer to this Menace, than by firing at him; for my Life was at Stake, and I did not think myself obliged to expose it more than was necessary; but, by the most terrible Misfortune, which was the Fore-runner of another yet worse, my Pistol only flashed in the Pan. The Chevalier took Notice thereof; but for what Reason I know not, unless it was that he was afraid of a like Misfortune,

tune, he did not return my Fire; but only endeavoured to rush in upon me, the Moment he saw the Flash. Being fully persuaded by that Motion, that he was resolved to make sure of me, I discharged my second Pistol; but he was then so near me, he struck up my Arm, and the Ball went over his Head: Giving myself then over for lost, as he had the Advantage of a Pistol not yet fired, I closed in with him, and got him down, and in the Fall his Pistol went off also.

In the mean while, the Watch, judging, not without some Reason, by the Report of the two Pistols, that the Combat was over, got out at the Window one after another; but, seeing us close engaged, they stopped short, incommoding each other by their Number, for Want of Room. During these Transactions, *Mademoiselle de M—*, on one Side, shrieked out violently, and the President, on the other, increased the Uproar, by charging us all, with a loud Voice, to take Care of his Daughter, and not to let the Ravisher escape.

All this 'Time, the Chevalier and I were struggling for our Lives, who should get the better, and rid his Hands of the other; twice had I been undermost; but at last, in Spite of all his Strength, I had regained my Advantage, and was uppermost; being every Way above my Size, his Efforts were prodigious; but I had the better Wind, and could hold out the longer. In short, he was quite spent; I had him by the Throat, and two of the Watch were already bringing Hand-Cuffs to manacle him, insomuch that I thought all the Danger was over, when that terrible Man, giving himself over for lost, made one last Struggle to disengage his Arm. The Fear of letting go my Hold induced me to suffer a Motion, which it was in my Power

to have prevented, and for which I severely smarted; his Arm being at Liberty, he seized on a Poniard he had under his Cloaths, unknown to me, and stabbed me with it in the Belly. A great Cry immediately follows; at the same Time, the Chevalier, disengaging himself suddenly from under me, flings me from him out of the Reach of the Chimney; I lie without Motion, or Strength to stay myself; and the Steepness of the Roof sets me a Rolling; and I tumble headlong from the Top of the House into the Court-yard.

What Heaven takes under its Protection, is sure of being preserved in Safety: After such a Fall, who would have dared to hope, I should miraculously escape with Life? And yet thus it happened; the Dunghill, belonging to the Stables, lay critically underneath, ready to receive me; otherwise there had been an End of all my Adventures, at once: As it was I got off for two Legs, which chanced to lie so unfortunately in the Way, when I came to the Ground, that they were fractured in divers Places. The Pain I then felt, brought me out of the Swoon, occasioned by my Fright, and Loss of Blood; and I cried out dreadfully, but in vain; both the Watch, and the whole Family, were too much employed by the Chevalier, to hear me. My Blood still streaming from my Wounds, made me again faint away; and when I recovered my Senses, I found myself in a good Bed, with a Nurse, and a Chirurgion, who seemed intent upon assisting me.

Scarce had I begun to regain the Use of my Reason, when finding myself tormented with a burning Heat, I called for something to drink; and would have turned on one Side; but I was tied down, in such a Manner, on Account of my fractured Legs, which had been set, during my
Swoon,

Swoon, that it was impossible for me to stir: My Struggling, however, to that End, affected my Wounds, and made me cry out horribly. Here-upon the Chirurgeon came up to me, advised me to have Patience; and told me, I ought for ever to thank Heaven, that I had escaped so well, after so terrible a Fall.

I had not Strength enough to make any Answer to this Speech, so much were my Spirits exhausted; and I began, from that Moment, to be sensible of my Sufferings: In effect, so grievous were my Pains, that for seven Weeks, during which I was confined to my Bed, I scarce ever shut my Eyes. The Consequence hereof was, that during the short Intervals I had from Torment, I firmly resolved (if Heaven would be graciously pleased to deliver me from the Misfortune, which I had brought upon myself) I would forever forswear my Inclination, to pry into the Affairs of others; and would only meddle, for the future, with my own Business.

Mean while, my continual Pains long prevented my thinking either of *Lusnette*, or the Riches, whereof I was possessed; which I had run the Hazard of losing, by my overstrained Policy, or rather, by my Imprudence; but, as soon as I began to recover, and had Room to flatter myself, with the Hopes of coming off, for what I had already suffered, I pleased myself with the Thought, that the most consummate Happiness awaited me; and I should be the most fortunate of Mankind, if I would grow wise, and learn to make a good Use of those Advantages, with which Providence had blessed me.

These pleasing Reflections, however, were frequently interrupted by some uneasy Apprehensions, that Things might neither go right at my

new House, nor with my dear *Lusnette*, during my Absence. As to the former, I provided against all Inconveniences on that Side, by sending a Line to *Rametz*'s worthy Ecclesiastick; acquainting him, that I had been surprized abroad by a sudden Fit of Illness; and desiring him, to give Orders about my Affairs at Home, till my Return, which would be speedy. I was not less uneasy about the latter; having great Reason to fear, that my charming Maiden, having neither seen nor heard from me, and believing herself forsaken, might have looked out for some other Means of Subsistence, and be removed. Jealousy, then, got Possession of my Soul; I judged it not improbable, she might have found some other Lover; and this last Thought growing stronger every Moment, gained such an Ascendant over me, that, undoubtedly, it was a Hindrance to my Cure. It was several Times in my Head, to send somebody to enquire after her Welfare; but I had sufficient Power over myself, to refrain satisfying my Curiosity in this Respect; it was too dangerous a Point to betray my Secrets; and I had learned too well, at my own Expence, how reserved one ought to be in all one's Actions.

As soon as the President knew I was in a Condition to see Company, without any Prejudice to my Recovery, he did me the Honour to visit me; and, after having enquired kindly about my Health, he told me; he was too much obliged to me for having so greatly exposed my Life, in order to do him Service, not to give me some Proofs of his Gratitude; and that till I was in a Condition to be a Judge thereof, it was but fit he should acquaint me, without Reserve, what had been the Consequence of my desperate Encounter with the Chevalier; and what a Necessity he had been under,

under, to overlook many Considerations. You will be surprized thereat, as much as possible, continued the Magistrate, with some Emotion; and you will agree with me, that there is sometimes a Fate which thwarts all our Prudence, and determines Things absolutely, in Spite of us; what I am now going to tell you, will leave you no Room to question it.



C H A P. XII.

What followed after the Chevalier had got rid of Bigand. What Resolution the President took thereupon. Hypocrisy justly punished. Bigand determines to give over all farther Pursuit of Adventures.

SCARCE had the Chevalier *de Rocfer*, got rid of an Enemy so powerful as you, when he rose up nimbly; and facing about boldly, with a Pistol he drew out of his Pocket, in one Hand, and the Poniard, yet reeking with your Blood, in the other, he cried aloud, with a formidable Voice, which shewed the deepest Despair, that he would shoot the first who dared approach him through the Head; and, in a Word, would defend himself, in such a Manner, that, if he must perish, he would involve all, who were so hardy as to attack him, in his Fall. In effect, the Resolution and Intrepidity of this terrible Man daunted all the Watch, not one of them durst advance; and they seemed, by their Looks, to be consulting with each other, what Course they should take.

During this Interval, my Daughter, who got a Glimpse of me from the Place where she was,

came forward ; and falling on her Knees, conjured me, in the most moving Terms, to have pity on her. Being afraid that the least Motion might make her tumble headlong, like you, from the Top of the House to the Bottom, I ordered one of the Watch to go to her, help her up, and bring her to me : No, no, cried she, raising her Voice, let no one offer to touch me, otherwise I call Heaven to witness, I will instantly throw myself into the Court-Yard. Yes, Sir, pursued she, continuing still in the same suppliant Posture, all is over with your Daughter, unless you will give her your Word and Honour, that you will forgive her ; and consent to the Happiness of the Man who best deserves to be your Son-in-Law : I don't value my Life in the least, added she, in a desperate Tone ; but would rather lose it a Thousand Times, than save it at the Price of my Honour and my Peace.

Whilst my Daughter was thus speaking, the Chevalier and the Watch stood stock-still, seeming to wait my Answer, before they would resolve on any Thing ; and, in the mean While, Anger, Vexation, and Fear tormented me by Turns, and prevented my coming to any Determination. On one Hand, fatherly Affection made me tremble, at the Extravagance to which I saw my Daughter about to give Way ; it was then neither a proper Time nor Place to load her with Reproaches ; it was necessary, however, to come to some Result ; for I observed, in the Eyes of that cruel Girl, a Despair, which was ready to get the better of all other Considerations ; on the other, I could not resolve upon making a Promise, which I found myself by no Means disposed to keep : In short, between these different Passions, my Mind was so divided by Turns, that
I could

I could only sigh, and was incapable of any thing else.

Hereupon, my Daughter, being fully persuaded she was quite undone, and that my Silence foreboded her no Good, rose up on a sudden, and turning to the Chevalier; Farewel for ever, said she, you, who alone could have rendered me happy; remember, I know not how to make a Promise in vain; I cannot be yours, I will never be——Hold, inhuman Child, cried I, seeing her just ready to throw herself headlong, thy Death would soon be followed by mine: I consent to every Thing, let these desperate Lovers pass freely, pursued I, to the Watch, and my Servants, too dear a Price would it cost me, to assert that Power, which the Ties of Blood has given me. Having thus said, my Mind was cruelly oppressed, and so much did my Strength begin to fail me, that my Domesticks were obliged to take me up, and carry me to my Bed.

I had given Orders, before I stirred from thence, that Word should be brought me, as soon as my Daughter was got safe away, from the dangerous Place, where I had left her; but not a Soul came, with any News of her; and I trembled, for Fear she had put her Threats in Execution: I sent my Valet de Chambre, therefore, to see what was the Matter, and how the Case stood. He soon returned, and informed me, that the Person, to whom I had given that Charge, was far enough from being likely to perform my Orders, the Chevalier *de Rocfer* having taken Care, to lock him up in the Cock-Loft, together with the Watch, when he withdrew from thence with my Daughter, lest they should offer to molest him as he was going away.

I could

I could not help wondering at this ridiculous Precaution; it was a Sign his Mind was greatly disturbed; as if I could not have laid a Trap for him, as he went off; but he might well imagine, after my Daughter's threatening to kill herself, if any Dissimulation was used towards her (which I had forgot to tell you) I should be far from giving them any more Disturbance. I ordered the Door, then, to be broken open; and the Watch to be dismissed; I also bid several of my Servants, disperse themselves different Ways, that they might get some Intelligence of my Daughter.

It was not long, before I heard from her, though by another Hand; she sent me a Letter by a Person unknown, wherein she asked me a thousand Pardons, for what was past; assuring me, she was about to retire into a Convent, out of the Kingdom; and that, to convince me, she was, in some Measure, worthy of the Favour I had shewn her, she would not marry her Lover, as great a Value as she had for him, without my free Consent.

I received also another Letter, almost in the same Style, from the *Chevalier de Rocfer*; only he insinuated to me artfully, that he was of a Family of sufficient Distinction, and should be one Day Master of a sufficient Estate not to disgrace me, in Case he should be accepted as my Son-in-Law; adding, that, it was true, the disorderly Life he had led, 'till he became acquainted with my Daughter, had rendered him unworthy of being allied to either of us; but that, since that Time, he was become a Man of Honour and Probity; that this was all owing to me, and he begged me not to destroy my own Work; protesting, at the same Time, that as a Punishment for having incurred my Displeasure, he would not proceed
any

any farther, 'till he had obtained my Pardon, and Assent to his Happiness.

This, *Monf. Bigand*, is the State wherein Things are at present, pursued the President very kindly ; I have received an Account since, of the Place where my Daughter is, and assuring me, she is actually in a Nunnery ; as also, that, to convince me of her Respect, and to deserve, in some Measure, my Forgiveness and Favour, she has refused to have any Correspondence with her Lover, till he has made his Peace with me. In effect, he is now at *Paris, incognito*, where he leaves no Means unemployed to obtain his Pardon, on Account of the Numbers he has killed : And his Family, who see him reformed, are on the Point of prevailing, by Reason of my Answer, to a Nobleman of great Power, who espouses his Interest, that, in case he gains it, it shall soon be followed with my Pardon also, and my Consent to his Marriage. Things being in this Posture, I don't at all doubt, but this Affair will be quickly determined. In short, the Behaviour of my Daughter since its being in her Power to please her own Inclination, with Respect of her Lover, and the Noise this surprizing Adventure has made in the World, has induced me to come to this Resolution ; and I would rather have the Name of an indulgent Father, who is too fond of his Children, than the Character of having rendered them miserable for their whole Lives.

This tender Parent, having thus concluded his Story, I took the Liberty to ask him, how he had dealt with *Mademoiselle*, his Niece. Oh ! for her Part, said he, she has rendered herself altogether unworthy of my Favour, by making a new Attempt to run away ; I have confined her, therefore, in a good Nunnery, where she will
stay

stay, in all Probability, for the Remainder of her Life. And as for the pretty Gentleman, her Lover, such an excellent Character has been given of him, that, in all Likelihood, he will be sent to marry at the Plantations; in order to teach such Scoundrels, that, when we are willing to intrust them with the Education of our Children, they ought to keep within the Bounds of their Duty, and not extend their criminal Views to Objects, whom they ought to respect.

Having thus said, the good President rose up; but, before he left me, he made me an Offer of his Interest, to procure me any Place that would suit me. I thanked him for his Kindness; but told him, I was resolved, after what had befallen me, to retire within my own Family, and never more expose myself to the Danger of such Accidents. He approved readily of my Design, and said, since it was so, he would contribute towards rendering my Life easy; for which I again returned him Thanks; not having a Mind to shew I did not want his Assistance, lest a haughty Refusal should occasion Suspicions, inconsistent with the Tranquillity, which I proposed, for the future, to make my principal Aim.

As soon as I was able to walk, which I could not at first without the Help of Crutches, I waited on the President, to take my Leave of him. He endeavoured to detain me a Month or two longer, 'till I had regained my Strength; but I excused myself civilly, and again reminded him of my Desire to retire from Business. Finding me resolved upon this Head, he went into his Closet, and brought me an Assignment upon the City-Chamber for Twenty Pounds a Year, with a Hundred *Louis d'Ors* in Ready Money, whereof he made me a Present; advising me, at the
same

same Time, to go to the Embassador ; assuring me, he had expressed himself too well satisfied with my Behaviour, not to do something for me. Hereupon, I gave the President a Thousand Thanks for his Goodness ; begged him, to continue me the Honour of his Protection, and having had a Coach, called, ordered it to drive to Monsieur de —'s, being determined to make an End with him likewise that same Day, that I might the sooner enjoy the Pleasure of being independent.

I was fortunate enough to find his Excellency at Home ; and, on sending in Word of my being without, was immediately introduced into his Closet : He could not forbear smiling at the Sight of me ; but soon recovering himself, he enquired kindly after my Welfare. Having satisfied his Excellency in that Respect, I acquainted him with my Design of retiring from Business, in Case it met with his Approbation ; not being willing, I said, to quit his Service, without first obtaining his Permission. This he readily granted me, with the most graceful Air in the World ; highly extolling my Merit before every body : And concluding, with an Order, to give me Two Hundred *Louis d'Ors*, to help to defray the Charges, as he was pleased kindly to intimate, of my extraordinary Cure.

Divers Persons of Distinction likewise, who were then with the Embassador, treated me with great Courtesy, and probably were not a little surprized within themselves, that with so unprosperous an Aspect, I had given Occasion for so much Talk of me ; for my Adventure was in every One's Mouth, and had been so much exaggerated in the telling of it, that it was no Wonder looked upon as a little Hero.

Having received the Embassador's handsome Presents and paid my Respects to his Excellency, I went next to *Saint Onge*; that I might not have any Thing wherewith to upbraid myself. The friendly Secretary would by no Means part with me, 'till I had staid Dinner with him, and there was no Manner of Civilities which I did not receive from his Wife and him. I was forced to undergo a little Examination, what was to become of me for the future, from which I disengaged myself with Dexterity enough, and enquired, in my Turn, if he knew any Thing of *D'Ossilly*. He informed me that he had obtained his Pardon, was at *Paris*, and, it was said, was grown a very honest Man: I did not at all wonder thereat; Debauchery being frequently followed by a sincere Reformation. I asked them where he might be found, having at Heart the Thousand Crowns I had stolen from him, and being resolved to restore them; and *Saint Onge* directed me to a Coffee-House, where he came every Day, and where I might meet with him, in Case I wanted him. I thanked *Saint Onge* for his Information; and, after having some other Discourse on various Subjects, took Leave of him and his lovely Wife; and was followed out of the *Hotel*, by a long Train of all the Domesticks, who quite tired me with Compliments, and from whom I had much ado to get away.



C H A P. XIII.

Duty gets the better of Love. Bigand's prudent Conduct. His Jealousy of Lufinette.

HAVING at last broke loose from the Cares of my quondam Fellow-Servants, I hastened to my dear Habitation ; with Design to deliberate on divers Points, which then came into my Thoughts, and which nearly concerned me. To my Joy, I found every Thing in the same State wherein I had left it ; and being easy upon that Head, I endeavoured to recollect myself, and revolve within my Mind what Course of Life I should follow for the future, and what was wanting, to compleat my Happiness. On making this inward Review, two Objects in particular ingrossed my Thoughts, which affected me in the most lively Manner, and were of great Importance thereto : The one was a Father, who, after the Hopes wherewith I had flattered him, must necessarily be dying with Uneasiness, in Prison ; the other a Mistress, whom I adored, and who after so long an Absence, must needs imagine herself forsaken. These Considerations forced Tears from my Eyes ; and made me sensible, Riches alone were not sufficient, to render my Life happy.

Overcome with the Reflections occasioned thereby, I resolved to endeavour forthwith to satisfy my Desires ; and, accordingly, next Morning, as soon as I was dressed, I hastened out, and got into the first Hackney, that happened in my Way. The Coachman immediately asked me,

whither I wanted to go ; and I then found I was in the wrong, in not having considered that, before my coming out of Doors : Love pleaded for my Mistress ; and Natural Affections for a Father, who was under Affliction. But, cries Love, perceiving I was in Suspense, you can be in no Doubt about finding your Father, he is in a Place, from whence he can't stir, without your Assistance ; and it is not the same with *Lusnette* : Absence causes great Alterations ; and how do you know, but the Minutes you are about to lose, may be very precious, and irretrievable ? She may, perhaps, have struggled hard till now to keep herself faithful ; and the being a Moment too late, has frequently occasioned Abundance of Sorrow.

The Cries of Blood, however, and Natural Affection, pleaded very differently ; what did they not represent to me ? A Father lying in Goal upon Straw ! A Father whom I had myself sent thither ! A Father who, perhaps, might be dying that Instant ! Alas, how greatly must he have suffered ! I wavered not one Moment the Minute these Thoughts came into my Head, but gave Orders directly to drive me to the Prison.

It was not without some Difficulty the Goaler recalled me to Mind ; so great an Alteration had the Pain I had so long endured caused in me ; however, on the first Token I gave him whereby to remember me, he expressed Abundance of Joy, for seeing me again ; and assured me he had been very uneasy, at not hearing of me, though he did not question my having been hindered by somewhat that could not be avoided. I enquired then earnestly after the Welfare of the *Sieur Bigand* ; and he told me he was much better than when I last saw him, by Reason of the Care that had been

been taken of him, in Hopes that I should certainly come again, one Day or other; but that he was very impatient for his Liberty, especially since he had been flattered with the Expectation thereof.

Hereupon, I answered it should not be my Fault, if he did not go out immediately, as I had the Money about me, to pay down directly; to which he replied, he wished it was in his Power to set him free that Instant, but there were some Forms to be first gone through, which he would take Care of that Instant, before he could be discharged; and if I would give myself the Trouble to return in the Afternoon, I might have him away with me.

As I could do no better, I assured him I would come at the Time appointed, and got again into the Coach; and having thus complied with my Duty, thought I might then give way to the Dictates of my Soul; accordingly, I ordered the Fellow to drive me to *Lusnette's* Lodging. As I drew near the House, my Heart began to flutter with Fear, and trembled with the Apprehension of her no longer being there. As soon as I was at the Door, therefore, I bid the Coachman ask for the Landlady; and the Moment I set Eyes on her, I enquired, with infinite Uneasiness, whether my Sister was still with her. The good Woman, having recalled me to Mind, cried out for Joy; and, without making me any Answer, ran in again as fast as possible: I thought it reasonable to judge from thence, that Things were in the same Condition wherein I had left them, and that she was gone to give Notice of my Return.

Nor was I mistaken; as I went up Stairs, I beheld my lovely Charmer who was coming to meet me; and the Undress wherein I found her made

me plainly perceive she was in Bed when I arrived, and had got up to shew her Eagerness to see me again. I was transported with Joy thereat; and, as soon as I beheld her, stretched out my Arms to receive her, not being able to advance any farther by Reason of the Weakness of my Legs, and the Motion I then felt. *Lusnette* started back a Step or two, extremely surprized at the great Alteration she observed in my Looks, and the Difficulty with which I walked; after which she came up to me; embraced me for the first Time; asked me a Hundred Questions, and reproached me tenderly for having forsaken her.

I excused myself in the best Manner I was able; enquired earnestly, in my Turn, after her Welfare, and assured her how very uneasy I had been, for fear she should have wanted any Thing during my Absence. She told me, bating the Trouble and Concern it had given her, to find herself so little regarded or neglected by me, she had not known the Want of any of the Necessaries of Life, her kind Landlady having supplied her sufficiently with every Thing. She added, that the good Woman had done all that was in her Power to divert her, and had been so very officious to oblige her, that she would very fain have introduced some of her Acquaintance to her, in order to dispel the grievous Melancholy with which she had been oppressed; and, in short, that she had teased her so much upon this Head, having a Mind even to help her to a Husband, that she had been forced to let her know the Reasons for being averse thereto.

These Words, of which I took but too much Notice, re-kindled, in an Instant, all those jealous Emotions which had tormented me during my

my Illness ; and which the Sight of *Lusnette* had extinguished. Well ! said I, with Abundance of Emotion, did not you, at last, consent to be amused with some Company ? Or, at least, did not you agree to see the Person whom she designed you for your Spouse, though it might be only by the Way of Frolick ? Oh ! no, answered the lovely *Lusnette*, with great Simplicity, to what Purpose would it have been ? Besides, I had something else in my Head, and to free myself from the Importunity of the Woman, I acquainted her therewith, since which she has not teased me so much ; but, for all this, I am very glad of your Return at last ; it was high Time on all Accounts.

But may one presume to ask, pursued I, yet more disordered, what it was you had in your Head that thwarted your Landlady's good Intention to serve you ; and what were those Reasons, which were of such vast Importance, to render my speedy Return so urgent and necessary ? Aha ! cry'd *Lusnette* smiling, you demand Abundance of Questions at once ; but when you have explained yourself about some certain Points which concern me, and have given me an Answer to the Request I made you, the Evening you left me, to put me in a Way of leading a Life less liable to Censure, I will satisfy you, ingenuously, with Relation to what you ask : Thus you see, continued the prudent *Lusnette*, it depends, at present, as much upon yourself as on me.

Whilst the dear Object of my Affections thus artfully evaded my Questions, I was so much taken up with a Stratagem, which just then came into my Head, that I scarce minded what she had been saying ; wherefore, I affected to answer her in the same Strain, and, changing the Con-

verlation, took my Leave soon after, in order to make Preparation for the Reception of my Father, the Hour approaching when I was to fetch him away. *Lusnette* seemed greatly surprized at my Haste to be gone from her, having flattered herself with the Hopes that I should stay Supper with her, and at any other Juncture, I should have been overjoyed at the Sorrow she expressed, for being disappointed; but can a Man be jealous and just at the same Time? I pretended, therefore, a Necessity for going; promised to stay longer with her next Day, and bid her farewell.



C H A P. XIV.

Bigand takes his Father out of Prison. He is found out by his Mother.

BEFORE my going to the Gaol for my Father, I went Home, and sent for one of those Women who, having little or no Business of their own, employ themselves in doing Jobs for others. As I had never lain at my new House but once, and had never been seen by my Domesticks, no more than their late Master *Rametzi* (though I was resolved to live, for the future, like other People) I thought proper to defer discovering myself to them, till I had settled every Thing with my Parents, and put them in a decent Garb. I ordered this Woman then to prepare Chambers for my new Guests, in Expectation of bringing Home my Family with me; after this, I dispatched her to the next Tavern, with Instructions to bespeak a good Supper, and whatever was necessary

cessary to entertain them plentifully : This done, I dismissed her, and getting into the first Coach I met, hastened to the Prison.

I had been impatiently expected there; every Thing was ready, and they began to tremble, lest some fresh Accident should have happened again to prevent my coming : They were all overjoyed, therefore, when I arrived there ; and my Mother having had Notice that her Husband was to be set at Liberty that Evening, was there waiting with her Daughter, and a little Boy, between ten and eleven Years old, ready to receive me. Scarce had they set Eyes on me, when my Father, that venerable old Man, would have thrown himself at my Feet ; but I prevented him, as well as the rest of the Family, who would have done the same. My Spirits were in too great a Hurry to be able to talk much with them ; I desired the Gaoler, therefore, to whom I made a handsome Present, to put these dear Relations into the Coach, whilst I gave somewhat to the Turnkey, and those who were Fellow-Prisoners with my Father, to drink his Health ; a poor Pretence, alas ! on which I laid Hold, to wipe away some Tears, which I could not refrain, rather than for any other Reason.

As soon as the Coach drove on, I muffled up my Face ; having observed, that my Mother kept her Eyes fixed upon me, and that her Tears forced their Way, in Spite of her, through her Eye-Lids. Mine were also ready to run down, and my Heart to overflow with Tenderness, my Father having taken one of my Hands, and squeezing it gently, whilst he poured out his Soul, in the following grateful and pathetic Exclamations : Happy, happy they, who gave you Being ! What unparalleled Generosity ! What Greatness

Greatness of Mind! To whom, then, am I indebted, for all the Favours, wherewith you have been pleased to honour me?

It was high Time for us to be at our Journey's End; I could not have held out any longer; fortunately for me, the Coach stopt, and I obtained a little Respite, whilst I had my dear Family up Stairs, and shewed them the Chambers that were prepared for them. This done, I offered my Father a Night-Gown, that he might be more at his Ease, and even helped him to undress himself; he was surprized, to the last Degree, at such uncommon Earnestness to oblige, in a Man of my Appearance, and cried out, I was certainly an Angel come from Heaven, for his Comfort. After having done him all these little Kindnesses, which never fail of touching the Heart and gaining the Good-will, I shewed him all the Conveniences of his Apartment, and told him, I begged him to make use of all he saw, as what was his own for the future, and what he might dispose of without Reserve. In the mean while, my Mother, who hearkened attentively to every Word, with so much Disorder, and Colour in her Face, as shewed visibly her Mind was agitated by some secret, and heart-affecting Emotions; accordingly, she alone was silent, whilst the whole Apartment rung with the Praises, bestowed by the others, upon my Charity, and generous Heart.

When I had done with my Father, I desired my Mother, likewise, to accept of a Gown I brought her, 'till proper Cloaths could be procured; and rendered her the same little Services wherein I had before assisted her Spouse. She then broke Silence, and telling me, it was but just, I should be waited on in my Turn, offered
to

to help me to undress myself. Nothing, but the Fear of discovering myself too soon, could have induced me to accept her Help; but, scarce had I pulled off my Neck-Cloth, when, seeing a Mark I had at my Throat, and being convinced, she had not been mistaken, in the Suspicion, which had disturbed her from the first Moment she again set Eyes on me, she fell about my Neck, and embracing me tenderly; Ah, my Son, my dear Son, cried she, it is thee! do I then see thee again?—Having thus said, her Legs failed her, and had it not been for an Elbow-Chair that stood by, wherein I seated her, she would have tumbled backwards.

My Father, and Sister, drawing nigh, upon this Outcry of my Mother's, recalled me to Mind immediately; Tears, and the most hearty Embraces, were then the Evidences of our mutual Joy. O Nature! how sincere and powerful are thy Dictates! In the mean while, my Mother, whose Disorder lasted but a few Moments, held out her Arms for me; and my Father, and Sister, after their first Transports were over, stood as motionless, not being able to recover from their Surprise: I took Advantage of this Respite to throw myself at the Feet of a Father, and Mother, whom I had cost so much Sorrow; and, as the Pardon I asked was accompanied with many Tears, and an unfeigned Repentance, it was not very difficult to obtain it.

After this moving Scene, a handsome Supper was brought in, whereof we all partook with an uninterrupted Pleasure; when the Desert came in, I entertained my dear Guests, with the Account of my Adventures, and the Riches that had fallen to me; which made them all weep for Joy: I concluded my Recital, with a hearty Invitation.

vation to them all to live with me ; which was readily granted, with the most lively Marks of Satisfaction.

One cannot spend one's Time always in making Protestations ; to vary the Scene, therefore, a little, I conducted my Family into the several Apartments ; they highly extolled the Magnificence of the Furniture, and, at every new Thing I shewed them, my Mother cried out, with a Heart overflowing with Transport, Oh, my dear Child ! is it then true, that all this belongs to thee ?

The Room where *Likinda* hung at full Length put them in perfect Raptures ; my Sister, in particular, could never have been weary of gazing at that charming Picture ; and she agreed, that if the Original came up to it, as I assured her she did, she was well worthy of the most exalted Happiness. Hereupon, I took Occasion to tell my Sister, that, with Virtue and Constancy, a Woman might hope for every Thing from Fortune ; and lowering my Voice, I asked her, whether being so young, and so pretty as she was, she had not some Sweetheart. The poor Girl blushed at this Question ; and on my pressing her hard, confessed, that she was beloved by the Son of an ordinary Tradesman ; but being neither of them in Circumstances to marry, they avoided each other, and not without Reason. I thanked her for her Confidence, promised to make a good Use thereof, and to give her no Cause to repent it.

It being then more than Time for them to go to rest, I conducted them into their respective Chambers ; and, for my own Part, went to that where *Rametzi* used generally to lie. It was with much ado I could get to Sleep there ; all the Obligations

Obligations I had to that dear Benefactor returning then fresh into my Memory. The Accident that had befallen me since his Departure, had till then prevented my writing to him, and sending him what he had reserved for his own Use; but it was the first Thing I did when I arose; this done, I went to my Father's Chamber to see how he had rested.

The Joy he had felt, at the Prospect of a new, agreeable, unforeseen, and unhop'd for State of Life, had kept him awake all Night; I desired him, therefore, and my Mother, not to get up; and begged them not to be uneasy, if I left them for some Days; having an Affair to finish, upon which my future Quiet depended; which done, we should continue together for the Remainder of our Lives. This Declaration was not heard without some Trouble; their Knowledge of my former Adventures causing them to dread some new Turn of Affairs; I comforted them, however, (especially my Mother, who had not been able to forbear Tears, at the News of my approaching Absence) by embracing them, and assuring them, that the Business which called me away, was nothing more than common, and could not be attended with any dangerous Consequences.



C H A P. XV.

Bigand finds out D'Ossilly ; and why. His grateful Return to the young Laundress, his Deliverer. The Test to which he puts Lufinette's Virtue. The Marriage of Don Carlos to the fair Linette. Bigand's Reflections thereupon. His own Nuptials celebrated, together with his Sister's. How he behaves to his Family.

BEFORE my setting out from my own House, I furnished myself with a considerable Sum in Gold, after which I went directly to the Coffee-House where *St. Onge* had told me *D'Ossilly* was to be found, it being about his Hour of coming thither. Whilst I was waiting there for him, I weighed the Scheme I had formed, to render my Happiness certain, by convincing myself fully of *Lufinette's* Virtue and Sentiments: It is no Time to put these to the Proof, when once the indissoluble Knot is tied. My Design was, indeed, to marry that charming Creature, and make her happy for the rest of her Days; but I could not resolve upon so ticklish a Step, before I was well assured, of her being truly deserving of it. My Heart, and my Way of thinking, pleaded in her Favour; but I was naturally jealous; I had been long absent; and many Endeavours had been used to gain her, even by her own Confession. I had some Scruples remaining upon that Head, which my distrustful Temper made me imagine well grounded; in short, I was determined to clear up all my Doubts, and could not hit upon any surer Means, than to put her Virtue to such a Test, as was most likely to stagger

stagger her. These were the Thoughts which employed my Mind, when *D'Ossilly* entered the Room.

His Features were too deeply engraven in my Memory, for me to be mistaken in him; I took a Pleasure in viewing him from Head to Foot; he appeared mightily dejected; was dressed in a black Suit, very much worn; and looked as if he was but low in Pocket. He seated himself in one Corner of the Coffee-Room, where he surveyed all who were therein; I had my Turn as well as others; he fixed his Eyes some Time upon my Cloaths, after which he sighed; it seemed as if he was inwardly repining at his own being so poor, whilst he had Reason to imagine, by the Richness of my Dress, that I wallowed in Affluence.

He sat a good while with his Eyes cast down, during which he appeared to be talking to himself; at least his Lips moved, and his Fingers, which went likewise, seemed to follow the Traces of his Thoughts. A second Time did he survey the whole Company, and again did he view me with the utmost Attention; it seemed as if he was endeavouring to recollect some Acquaintance of former Times; I fixed my Eyes then upon him, in my Turn, and tipping him the Wink, went out of the Coffee-House, and got into a Coach that waited for me at the Door.

What I had foreseen came to pass; *D'Ossilly* followed me out soon after, being desirous, no Doubt, to know what a Person unknown could want with him; I watched him as he came out, and seeing him ready to pass by, called him by his Name, at which he seemed greatly surprized, and made up to the Coach-Door. Accept of this Purse, Sir, said I, holding one out to him, you

will find therein the Principal and Interest of a Sum that was taken from you, and which I was charged to re-deliver into your Hands : Having thus said, I made a Bow to him with my Hand ; bid the Coachman drive on ; and left him. I have not heard any Thing of him since ; but, I am very well satisfied the Two Thousand Crowns I restored to him came very seasonably ; and he would have been heartily sorry, to have missed being at the Coffee-House that Morning. Good and ill Fortune often befall us at a Time when we dream least thereof.

Being eased of this Burthen which had given me some Disquiet, I went to the Tavern to which I had carried the Letter from my kind Benefactors the young Landress ; and enquiring for the Vintner's Son, asked how Affairs stood between him and the generous *Marianne*. He was a little surprized at the Question, as not knowing me ; but, on my discovering myself to him, told me her Mother had not yet been able to make her marry her old hump-backed Lover ; but led her such a Life to force her to it, he was afraid she would at last, be obliged to yield. Upon hearing this, I resolved immediately to prevent, if possible, the Unhappiness of my kind Deliverer. In order hereto, therefore, I sent directly for her and her sordid minded Mother, and making myself known to them, told the latter if she would consent forthwith to her Daughter's Nuptials with the young Vintner, I would instantly render him as good a Match to her as *Old Grump*, by the Present of a good Purse of Gold to the fair *Marianne*, the Moment the Marriage Articles were signed. Upon this handsome Offer, the transported Lovers threw themselves at my Feet, and embraced my Knees ; and the mercenary old Bedlame, finding her only
Objection

Objection to the Match removed, readily agreed to it: A Scrivener was therefore sent for, without Delay; the Writings drawn, and the Purse delivered to the no small Joy of the amiable *Marianne*, and her enamoured Lover; who blessed the Accident which had driven me to take Refuge at her Mother's.

Having thus made a suitable Return to the Kindness of my generous Deliverer, to my own inexpressible Satisfaction, I bent all my Thoughts upon accomplishing the important Affair which I had so much at Heart. In order to this, I hired one of the handsomest ready-furnished Lodgings that could be got; pretended to be a Stranger come to *Paris* for my Pleasure; and, to prepossess my Landlady in my Favour, paid her down a Month's Rent beforehand. This done, I gave her to understand, that I was a near Relation to a certain Nobleman, at whose *Hotel* I had left my Equipage and all my Servants; but, that being passionately fond of Liberty, and hating Ceremony, I had chosen to be *Incognito* myself in ready-furnished Lodgings, that I might neither be obliged to make or receive any Visits. When one has Money enough, every Thing one says is an Article of Faith; we soon grew very well acquainted; and amongst other Discourse, I asked, whether she could not help me to some trusty Person whom I might employ about my Affairs of Gallantry: This I spoke in a jesting Tone; but it did not succeed one Jot the less for that; within Half an Hour after, an old Woman pretty well dressed, was brought to me.

I began with clapping Ten *Louis d'Ors* into her Hand, and telling her where *Lusnette* lodged: Her Landlady, pursued I, has some Influence over the little Angel; you must address yourself,

therefore, to her; here are Twenty Pistoles you are to give her, as the Earnest of a Hundred, which I promise her, in case she procures me a Meeting with her fair Lodger. That you may proceed regularly, continued I, you may offer her, in my Name, a Hundred *Louis d'Ors* a Month, and Three Hundred down; but, above all, deal with me sincerely, for as soon as you have used your utmost Efforts to obtain me my Desire (if you find all to no Purpose) I will take the Affair in Hand myself. In the mean while, I shall have Notice of all your Proceedings; and, provided you have dealt with me fairly, and done your best for me, I will pay you as handsomely as if you had met with Success.

The good Woman, in Raptures at my Generosity, and entirely won by my liberal Present, promised me Wonders; and assured me, she would be with me next Morning, by the Time I got up, and, she hop'd, should bring me a favourable Answer. In effect, a better could not have been expected at the first Attempt; the Landlady being gained over, and having intimated, that she did not despair of bringing the young Gentlewoman to hearken to Reason, though she was undoubtedly very discreet: She added, that there could not have been a more favourable Opportunity; because a Man for whom she had the greatest Value, and who had already forsaken her once, having made her but one short Visit in almost three Months, had again missed coming to her, though he had promised it; which gave all the Reason imaginable to judge, he either cared no longer for her, or some Accident had befallen him; that which of these soever was the Case, *Lusnette* must necessarily resolve upon some Way to subsist, and the Offer I made her was too advantageous,

vantageous, and substantial, to believe she would refuse it.

This Answer, however, was by no Means decisive, it was requisite *Lusnette* should declare herself. I sent back the old Woman therefore; who returning soon again, brought me Word, the Landlady desired I would have a Week's Patience, at the End of which, she hoped, I should be fully satisfied. To leave no Room for Doubt, I resolved to wait that Time, and not set a Foot within *Lusnette's* Lodging, that I might no Way be a Hindrance to my own Design: In the Interim, till the Expiration of that tedious Interval, I went every Day to my own House; where I diverted myself with the pleasing Sight of my dear Family, whom I put in a very handsome Garb, and loaded them continually with fresh Presents.

One Night, as I was returning to my ready-furnished Lodging, I saw a fine Illumination, at a House, or rather Palace, about Ten Doors from thence; I enquired what was the Reason thereof, having no room to think it was for any Publick Rejoicing, and was told, it was on Account of a great Wedding, which had been solemnized the Evening before at a Country-Seat of the Bridegroom's. I was curious, without knowing why, to hear the Names of the new-married Pair; and was answered, they were Strangers to that of the Man, and could only tell that he was a *Spaniard*, and his Bride a young *Parisian* of Distinction, who was matched very advantageously; they added, that the Bridegroom was very well known at *Paris*, not only by Reason of his high Birth, and immense Riches, but on Account of a very extraordinary Adventure, that befel him, which had been sung, in Ballads, about

the Streets ; and straightway they told me the whole Story.

At the very first Word, I found it was *Don Carlos*, the Abbot, with whom I became acquainted at the College, as was observed in the first Part ; and I rejoiced inwardly at the good Fortune of the fair *Linette* : But, on thinking thereon, I could not help sighing about what related to myself, and lamenting my fatal Inclination to Curiosity ; which made me venture being the most wretched of Mankind, if *Lusnette* had fallen into the cruel Snare, which my Jealousy had laid for her.

At the Week's End, the Messenger of *Venus* was with me at my Levee ; Courage, Sir, said she, it will be your own Fault, if you are not happy. How, cried I, with some Emotion, does the beauteous Maiden consent to my Felicity ? Speak, resumed I, seeing her hesitate about answering me, upon this Word both my Satisfaction, and your Reward depends. Blets me ! how hasty you are, rejoined the Woman, you don't allow me Time for Utterance ! Know then, continued she, by the Measures that are taken, you will be the most fortunate of Men ; since, when the Affair is once over, you may please yourself with the Thought, of having the most virtuous Maiden in all *Paris*.—How ! said I, interrupting her, and tired with all this going about the Bush ! How ! pursued she, why because the Damsel in Question would not hear one Word about you either for Silver or Gold ; but fell a crying, like one distracted, at the bare Proposal, and will neither drink nor eat a Mouthful since : Nay, she would have carried her Folly so far, as to have left her Lodging ; but the Landlady has detained her, on Pretence of her being
in

in her Debt, and will take Care she shall not stir. And is this then the Happiness you had to promise me, cried I, in an ironical Tone, and being scarce able to contain my Joy? Have Patience, replied the wicked old Bedlame, I tell you she is ours; the Landlady and I have agreed, to introduce you into her Chamber at Night— Away, Wretch, said I interrupting her, you are a Profligate; begone, or I will put you into a Place—

The treacherous old Hag, did not give me Leave to say more; nor did I give her Time to apprise the Landlady of what had passed; but, getting into a Coach, hastened away to *Lusnette*, fully convinced her Virtue was Proof against all Trials, and blushing I had been capable of suspecting her. The lovely Virgin, was in Tears when I entered the Room, and her Sorrow was so great, she scarce perceived my coming in. Hereupon I asked her, hastily, the Cause of her Weeping; taking Care, for the present, not to let her know how well I was informed thereof; I pressed her so earnestly, that she, at last, confessed, all the Stratagems they had used to overcome her; she added, that had I staid away a Day longer, I should not have found her; she having resolved to make her Escape at Night, and take Refuge in a Nunnery.

I commended her, from the Bottom of my Heart, for her stedfast Perseverance in Virtue; and inwardly blessed my good Fortune, which had brought me to her so seasonably. Resolving, then, to come to a final Determination, once for all, I asked her, with all possible Circumspection, whether I might flatter myself with the Thought of not being indifferent to her; assuring her, if it was so, my Happiness was in her Power, and
I was

I was ready to make her my Wife. The lovely Maiden cast down her Eyes, blushed, and fetch'd a Sigh; I desired her to explain herself, and she stretched out her Arms to me. O Love! How eloquent are thy Signs! I threw myself with Transport at her ibeauteous Feet, and after having testified to her my Love and Gratitude, sent immediately for a Scrivener, to draw the Marriage-Articles. This done, I went directly to *Rametzl's* Ecclesiastic, and presenting *Lusnette* to him, begged his Assistance towards getting the usual * Formalities dispensed with; which the friendly Priest did, in such an obliging Manner, that in three Days I was on the Point of being happy.

I would not proceed any farther without paying my Father and Mother the Compliment of asking them their Consent; they granted it with great Readiness, and gave my dear *Lusnette* a Thousand Testimonies of the Joy they took in so charming an Acquisition. My Sister, especially, who, since her being dressed in a genteel Manner, had a very graceful Air, congratulated me on my approaching Nuptials, with an Earnestness that sensibly affected me. How happy are you, my Brother, said she; you are going to be united to one who is dear to you; I am in Raptures at it! She repeated this so often, that, at last, I recollected my having promised her to make a good Use of the Confidence she had reposed in me. I squeezed her by the Hand, therefore, and sending for her Sweetheart a little after, presented him to my Father, begging him to suffer me to make her happy, at the same Time with myself.

To

* It is usual in foreign Countries, even for Persons of Credit to have the Banns asked.

To this he willingly consented; judge then the Joy of these Lovers! I settled on my Sister a Portion of Ten Thousand Crowns; engaged to be at all the Charge of the Wedding, and to supply her and her Husband with all Manner of little Necessaries; insomuch that every one was in perfect Ecstasies.

Things being in this Posture, I thought it high Time to discover myself to my yet unknown Docticks; which I did, by the Means of the Ecclesiastick afore-mentioned, who had hired them, and for whom I sent for that Purpose. Their very Looks pleased me, and shewed the Judgment of him who had chosen them. I told them, I designed, for the future, to live like the rest of the World, and gave the necessary Orders for the proper Preparations for our double Nuptials; which were solemnized, a few Days after, in the Presence of my Father and Mother, and several of our Family, who were invited on that Occasion; and to whom I made considerable Presents, wherewith they returned home, extremely well satisfied.

As for my little Brother, I put him to School, within a Week after our Wedding. In short, I took all these dear Relations into the House with me; where we have lived ever since, in a perfect good Understanding, and the most consummate Happiness; till it shall please Heaven to make us Partakers of those inconceivable Blessings, which are reserved for such as are entitled thereto.

The End of the FOURTH and LAST PART.



ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE

R E A D E R.

THUS ends the Original; but being curious to know what became of Mons. Bigand, after his Marriage, I wrote to the celebrated Abbot D'El—, at Rome, and sent him a Copy of my Translation, that I might induce him to let me know his Thoughts thereof, as also, whether there ever was really any such Person, as the Heroe of these Adventures. I could not have addressed myself to any one, who was more capable of setting me right in such Matters; every body is sensible the Abbot D'El—— is one of the first-rate Literati; and has Correspondents in all the chief Cities of the Universe: Accordingly he was pleased to send me the following Answer, which I did not receive, till three Months after the Date of my Letter to him.

LETTER

ADVERTISEMENT.



LETTER of the Abbot D'EL——, to the Chevalier De MOUHY.

I Am greatly obliged to you, Sir, for the Copy wherewith you favoured me, of *Monf. Bigand's Adventures* : I perused it with singular Pleasure ; I could have wished, however, you had followed the Original more close ; you seem to me to be a great Lover of License, and no Friend to moralizing ; in effect, it is impossible to be more surpris'd, than I have been at the numerous and large Castrations you have made therein ; and I take the Liberty to advise you, when you proceed to a second Impression, to restore them all, and let the Whole appear in the Form which it ought to be. A Translator has not the same Liberty, as a Dramatick Author, to adapt the Manners of his Heroes to the Taste of the Age wherein he lives ; on the contrary, a Version resembles the Copy of a Picture, in which every minute Touch is to be imitated ; at least, this is my Opinion.

I did not answer your's sooner, because I waited for some Information as to the Particulars whereof you desired to be apprized ; and the Account I have received is as follows : *Charles Bigand*, born at *Venice*, departed this Life, in the same City, aged eighty-one, at the House of *Rametzi*, a famous Chemist, who survived him ; *Likinda* lived but four Years after her Marriage ;
and

ADVERTISEMENT.

and *Lusnette*, after her Husband's Decease, founded a Nunnery, wherein she ended her Days with the Reputation of a Saint.

Other Accounts add, that *Charles Bigand*, having applied himself to polite Literature, made a considerable Progress therein; and that several of his Pieces are still preserved, which are worthy of being transmitted down to the latest Posterity.

The Abbot D'EL.

Rome, May 18.

F I N I S.